This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

HN 1X4D 5

Digitized by Google

D 5214

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

A War Canoe.

Vol. 5 facing Title

Digitized by Google

THE MODERN TRAVELLER,

BEING A

COLLECTION

OF USEFUL AND ENTERTAINING

TRAVELS,

LATELY MADE INTO VARIOUS COUNTRIES:

THE WHOLE CAREFULLY ABRIDGED:

Exhibiting a View of the Manners, Religion, Government, Arts, Agriculture, Manufactures, and Commerce of the known World.

Illustrated with MAPS and ORNAMENTAL VIEWS.

VOL. V.

CAPTAIN COOK's VOYAGE ROUND THE WORLD.
IVES's VOYAGE TO INDIA.
ULLOA's VOYAGE TO SOUTH AMERICA.
RIEDESEL's TRAVELS THROUGH EGYPT.
M. LE POIVRE's TRAVELS TO THE EAST INDIES.
TOUR OF HOLLAND.

LONDON:

Printed for T. LOWNDES, No. 77, in FLEET-STREET.

M DCC LXXVII.

Digitized by Google

KD 5214

HARVARD COLLEGE
Oct 5 1942
LIBRARY

Digitized by Google

CAPTAIN COOK's VOYAGE ROUND THE WORLD,

In 1768, 69, 70, and 71,

CONTINUED.

THE 25th of October the armourers forge was ſet up on ſhore, and the naturaliſts went again in ſearch of plants. Tupia engaged himſelf in converſation with one of their prieſts upon the ſubject of religion, in which they ſeemed to agree very well. He took the opportunity to enquire if it was true that they eat men: the prieſt aſſured them that it was, but confined to their foes only, whom they killed in war.

The 27th the Captain and Doctor Solander went to inſpect the bay, and Mr. Banks employed himſelf in attaining the ſummit of a ſteep hill, near which were many uninhabited houſes. There were two rows of poles about fifteen feet high, interlaced with ſmaller ones, which made an avenue five or ſix feet wide, extending near one hundred yards down the hill in a regular line, the intent of which could not be diſcovered. The next day they went upon an iſland at the entrance of the bay, and met with a canoe, that was ſixty-ſeven feet in length, ſix in breadth, and four in height: her bottom, which was

Digitized by Google

ſharp, conſiſted of three trunks of trees, and the ſides and head were curiouſly carved. Upon this iſland they alſo found a large unfiniſhed houſe, the poſts of which were ornamented with carvings, upon which the inhabitants appear to ſet a great value. The huts here are built under trees in form of an oblong ſquare: the door, which is low, is on one ſide, and the windows at one end: the wall conſiſted of reeds covered with thatch. They no where ſaw any poultry nor any beaſts, except rats and dogs; the latter are eaten. In the bay is great variety of ſhellfiſh and crawfiſh in plenty; ſome of the latter weigh near a dozen pounds.

The 29th they ſet ſail from this bay, called by the natives *Tolaga*; it is ſituated in latitude 38 degrees, 22 minutes ſouth. The Captain obtained here nothing in trade, but ſome ſweet potatoes, and a little fiſh. The country around it is very hilly, but ſpread with various woods, cloathed with an agreeable verdure, and has many ſmall plantations. Mr. Banks met with a great number of trees totally unknown in Europe. The only roots they ſaw were yams and ſweet potatoes; but the ſoil was good enough to produce all ſorts of vegetables.

Sailing to the northward, he doubled a cape, which he called Eaſt Cape, after which many villages preſented themſelves to view, and the ſurrounding land appeared to be much cultivated. The 30th they diſcovered a bay called Hick's bay. Next morning ſeveral canoes came off from the ſhore, having many armed men, whoſe intentions appeared hoſtile. Before they came up, another canoe larger than any they had yet ſeen, full of armed Indians, made towards the Endeavour with great expedition. In order to prevent miſchief, the Captain ordered a gun with powder to be fired over their heads; but not having any effect, another with ball was fired, which frightened them ſo much, that they inſtantly paddled away.

Digitized by Google

away. Next morning they saw forty or fifty canoes along the shore, many of which came off with menaces and shouting. One of their Chiefs in the largest of the canoes made several harrangues, and by the flourishing of his pike, seemed to defy the ship; but being invited to trade, they at last came close along-side, and the Chief who had made the speech, after uttering a sentence, took up a stone, and threw it against the ship: this appeared to be a signal, as they all seized their arms. Tupia expostulated with them, assured them they would be immediately destroyed, and that the gentlemen only wanted to trade. This had not much effect; but seeing some pieces of cloth, brought them to reason. The gentlemen purchased a great quantity of craw-fish, muscles, and conger eels: no fraud was attempted by them, but some others who came after them took the goods from the Endeavour's people, without giving the returns agreed upon, but they were brought tolerably to their good behaviour, by firing over their heads. In the evening a double canoe built like those of Otaheite, but carved after a peculiar manner, came up to the ship, and Tupia entered into conversation with it; but as soon as it was dark, they threw a volley of stones at the ship, and then retreated. Here was a mountain in sight, which the Captain called Mount Edgcombe.

November 2d, many canoes made their appearance, and in the afternoon the ship sailed between a low flat island and the main, the villages upon which seemed more extensive than any they had yet seen. They were built upon high land next the sea, and were surrounded by a bank, with rails on the top of it, and a ditch. There were some inclosures, that seemed to be fortifications. The 4th a great number of canoes, with above two hundred armed men in them, surrounded the ship apparently with hostile intentions. Tupia attempted to

Digitized by Google

perſuade them to be peaceable, but in vain; upon which ſome muſquets were fired, which brought them to trade: they ſold two of their weapons without fraud, but a third, for which they had received ſome cloth, they would not deliver; upon this the thief was fired at with ſmall ſhot, and a muſquet ball ſhot through his canoe. Though wounded, his companion took no ſort of notice of him, and continued to trade without any diſcompoſure; till returning to their cheating tricks, another canoe was ſhot through; they then paddled away, and a round ſhot was fired over them.

The Captain in ſearching for a proper place for anchoring, ſaw a village fortified like the others they had ſeen. On the 5th ſeveral Indians came off to the ſhip, and behaved much better than they had done the preceding day. They had with them a Chief, who appeared to be a man of great probity and diſcretion. He came on board with another Indian, and the Captain preſented them with ſome nails and Engliſh cloth: *Tojava*, the name of the old Chief, informed Mr. Banks, that the natives were much terrified at the Engliſh; but their deſigns being explained to him, he acquainted the Captain, that they were often viſited by free-booters from the north, who plundered them of every thing, not excepting their wives and children; that ſuppoſing the Engliſh to come on the ſame errand, they had deſerted their houſes, and placed themſelves in their fortifications; he added, that for ſecurity, they built their houſes on the tops of rocks, in order to be the better able to defend themſelves. Whilſt the ſhip's people were fiſhing for mullets in the bay, the Indians, who were upon the banks, teſtified their friendſhip by every means, and invited them to come on ſhore. The gentlemen on board having given the Indians every aſſurance of friendſhip, it had its influence on them: they were very trac-

Digitized by Google

tractable, and behaved on all occaſions with great civility. The longboat had bad ſucceſs at fiſhing, but the Indians brought large quantities dreſſed and dried. Plenty of wood and good water were obtained, and the ſhip being very foul was heeled, and her bottom ſcrubbed.

Nov. 8th, ſeveral canoes came off, in one of them was Tojava: they ſupplied the ſhip with as much excellent fiſh, of a ſort reſembling mackarel, as was ſufficient for all their dinners, for which they received ſome pieces of cloth. A great variety of plants were collected by the naturaliſts, which had never been ſeen before; and remaining on ſhore till it was dark, they had an opportunity of obſerving how the natives diſpoſed of themſelves. They lay under the buſhes, the men towards the ſea in a ſemicircular form, and the women and children within it; their arms were near at hand againſt trees to be ready in caſe of alarm.

In the morning of the 9th, ſeveral canoes brought a prodigious quantity of mackarel, one ſort exactly reſembling thoſe of the Engliſh ſeas. Theſe canoes, were ſoon followed by many others equally well loaded: the quantity purchaſed was ſo great, that when ſalted they amounted to a month's proviſion of the whole ſhip's company.

This being a very clear day, the aſtronomer, Mr. Green, and the other gentlemen landed to obſerve the tranſit of Mercury. Whilſt this was doing on ſhore, a large canoe, with various commodities for trade, came along-ſide the ſhip, and Mr. Gore, the commanding officer on board, producing a piece of Otaheitan cloth, one of the Indians ſeized it, and refuſed either to return it or an equivalent, upon which he was ſhot dead on the ſpot. This alarmed all the reſt, who fled with precipitation, and would not renew the traffic: but when Tojava had explained the conduct of the deceaſed,

Digitized by Google

blaming him for it, they ſeemed to think he deſerved his fate.

Mr. Green was fortunate in his obſervation of the tranſit, as not the leaſt cloud intervened. The Captain called the bay Mercury Bay. The 10th the Captain, and the naturaliſts, went in boats to examine a large river that runs into the bay. Some miles up they found it wider than at the mouth. The ſhores abounded with fiſh of various kinds, particularly cockles, clams, and oyſters; alſo plenty of water-fowl. They were received with great hoſpitality by the inhabitants of a little village on the banks. There were the remains of a fort, or eppahs, well contrived for a ſmall number to defend themſelves againſt a greater. The Indians ſup before ſunſet, when they eat fiſh and birds baked or roaſted; they uſe a ſtick, ſtuck in the ground, for roaſting, and bake in the ſame manner as at Otaheite. At one of the ſuppers a female mourner was obſerved, who cut herſelf with a ſhell upon her breaſt, face, and hands, weeping and repeating doleful ſentences, but which Tupia could not explain; yet all the Indians, who were with her took no manner of notice of her. Some of them had ſcars remaing from ſuch an expreſſion of ſorrow, which from their depth ſhewed great ſeverity.

Nov. 11th, a bed of oyſters was diſcovered, which proved exceedingly good; and the next day the ſhip was viſited by two canoes of Indians, who had not been ſeen before: they came on board and traded very honeſtly.

Two fortified villages being deſcried, the Captain and the naturaliſts went to examine them. The ſmalleſt was romantically ſituated upon a perforated rock: the village did not conſiſt of above five or ſix houſes, fenced around. There was only one path to it, and that very narrow. A body of men, women, and children, from the other town, met them

Digitized by Google

them and invited them to their houſes; they repeated the word *Heromai* often, or "Peace," and when they underſtood the gentlemen intended viſiting their town, they expreſſed much ſatisfaction. The town was ſeated on a high point of land that hung over the ſea; it was pailed round and defended by a double ditch; within which a ſtage was erected, from whence to throw ſtones and miſſile weapons; one ſtage was for defending the path; and there were alſo ſome out-works: it appeared, the deficiency of water alone excepted, to be very well calculated for defence againſt ſuch weapons as they uſed; they had great plenty of fern-root laid up by way of bread, and alſo dried fiſh. But little land is cultivated here, and they have no other vegetable in their gardens than yams and ſweet potatoes. Near the foot of this fortification are two inſulated rocks very ſmall, yet had they both houſes on them and fortifications.

The 15th they ſailed from this bay: a number of iſlands of different ſizes appeared towards the north-weſt, which they called Mercury Iſlands. The bay lies in 36 degrees 47 minutes ſouth longitude, 184 degrees 4 minutes weſt. Upon the ſhore iron-ſand is in plenty, which proves that there are mines of that metal up the country, it being brought down by a rivulet from thence. The 18th they ſteered between the main and an iſland, which ſeemed very fertile, and as extenſive as Ulietea. Many canoes came along-ſide and ſung their war-ſong of defiance: no notice being taken of them, they threw a volley of ſtones and paddled away; and upon renewing their inſults, Tupia endeavoured to diſuade them from an attempt ſo much beyond their ſtrength: they threw their volley for all this, but fled upon a muſket being fired at one of their boats.

The 23d they caſt anchor in a bay called Ooahaouragee, and the Captain and the gentlemen went

Digitized by Google

in boats to examine the bottom of the bay, and ſtaid all night: they found a good harbour in freſh water in three fathoms. They ſaw a town and a heppah. In the woods they found ſome of the fineſt timber in the world. One tree was ninety-eight feet high from the ground to the firſt branch, quite ſtraight, nineteen feet in circumference; but yet larger were found afterwards. The Captain called the river The Thames. In the afternoon Captain Cook weighed anchor, but before they ſet ſail many canoes came up, and Mr. Banks traded with them: they were very fond of paper for which they gave their arms and cloaths. In general they trafficked very honeſtly, but one of them ſtealing a half-minute-glaſs, and being detected, Mr. Hicks, the commanding officer on board, the Captain being on ſhore, ordered him to receive twelve laſhes of a cat-o-nine-tails. The Indians, upon ſeeing their companion ſeized, were alarmed; they applied to Tupia, but nothing could ſave him; the puniſhment being explained to them they were a little appeaſed. The laſhes were inflicted, and the Indian afterwards received many kicks and blows from an old one, ſuppoſed to be his father. The canoes, however, left the ſhip, for they had loſt all confidence in the Engliſh.

The 24th they ſteered along the ſhore between the iſlands and the main, and in the evening anchored in fourteen fathom water: here they caught an immenſe quantity of fiſh of a ſort of bream. No inhabitants were viſible, but, from the fires ſeen at night, it was concluded to be inhabited. The next day they ſailed out of the bay: ſome iſlands were diſcovered, which the Captain called Poor Knights, upon which they ſaw ſome houſes and fortifications, and the land ſeemed cultivated. At night ſeveral canoes came to the ſhip. Two Chiefs came on board who had heard of the ſhip's arrival.

Digitized by Google

arrival. The courſe along the ſhore was continued the 26th. Two canoes came up and trafficked honeſtly; others came with people of higher rank.

Paſſing a remarkable point which the Captain called Cape Bret, lying in latitude 35 degrees 10 minutes ſouth, and longitude 185 degrees 23 minutes weſt. Many villages were ſeen both on the main, and on the iſlands, which appeared well inhabited. Several canoes came along-ſide the ſhip to trade, but preſently began to cheat like the reſt. One of the midſhipmen being impoſed upon, took a whimſical revenge: taking a fiſhing-line, he heaved the lead with ſo much dexterity, that the hook caught the thief by the buttocks, when the line breaking the hook remained in the fleſh. Theſe Indians were ſtrong and well proportioned; their hair was black and tied up in a bunch ſtuck with feathers: the Chiefs among them had garments made of fine cloth, ornamented with dogs-ſkin, and they were all tatowed.

The 27th the ſhip was among a number of ſmall iſlands, from which ſeveral canoes came off, who threw fiſh into the ſhip without aſking any thing for it. Others followed them, who pelted it with ſtones; and one throwing a lance at a ſailor, a muſket was fired at him with ſmall ſhot, upon which he fell in his canoe, and they all paddled away. For ſeveral days the wind was ſo unfavourable that the veſſel rather loſt than gained ground. On the 29th the ſhip was ſurrounded by thirty-three large canoes, containing three hundred armed Indians, ſome of them coming on board, the Captain gave ſome cloth to the Chiefs, and ſome ſmall preſents to others. For ſome time they traded peaceably, but while the Captain was at dinner, on a ſignal given, they all jumped overboard, and attempted to tow away the buoy; a muſket was fired over them without effect: ſmall ſhot were then fired at them, but they did not reach; a muſket loaded with ball was then

Digitized by Google

fired, which wounded one of the Chief's ſons, upon which they threw the buoy overboard; a round ſhot was fired over them, and reaching the ſhore they ran about the beach looking for it.

The Captain and the naturaliſts landed upon an iſland, and the Indians ſoon after came on ſhore: the company being in a ſmall cove, found themſelves preſently ſurrounded by near four hundred natives. The Captain drew a line on the ſand, telling them they were not to paſs it. They preſently ſung their ſong of defiance, while a party tried to draw the boats on ſhore, and the line was broken on all ſides. Upon this the Captain fired with ſmall ſhot: he was followed by Mr. Banks and two of the men. Upon this the Indians retreated; but being ſoon rallied by a Chief, who waved his patoo, Doctor Solander fired at him, and hit him, upon which he ran away with his men: they retired to an eminence out of the reach of ſmall arms, but the ſhip ſeeing the whole that paſſed, brought her broadſide to bear upon them, and firing ſome round ſhot over them, diſperſed them at once. Two of the Indians were wounded, but none killed. Upon ſearching a cave, the Chief was found, who had received a preſent from the Captain: he came out with his wife and brother aſking for mercy. One of the wounded Indians was his brother, and he was very anxious leſt the wound ſhould prove mortal; but when he learned the ſmall ſhot would not kill, with which he was ſtruck, his grief was alleviated. The gentlemen took the opportunity to let him know, that if any more hoſtilities were uſed, ball ſhould be fired.

The Captain, &c. now took to the boats again and rowed to another part of the ſame iſland, where, from an eminence, they had a moſt agreeable and romantic view of a great number of iſlands, well inhabited and cultivated. The people from one town

Digitized by Google

town approached unarmed in an humble manner; but the ſailors, notwithſtanding, forced into a plantation and ſtole ſome potatoes. The Captain puniſhed the fellows with each twelve laſhes: and one of them aſſerting that he had a right to plunder Indians, received ſix laſhes more.

The 30th was a dead calm, two boats were therefore ſent to ſound the harbour, and many canoes came up and traded very fairly, and the gentlemen going again on ſhore met with a very civil reception from the natives, which friendly intercourſe continued all the while they ſtaid in the bay. The old Chief ſhewed them the inſtruments uſed in tataowing, which were much like thoſe of Otaheite: they alſo ſaw the man that had been wounded with a ball in the attempt to carry away the ſhip's buoy, and though it had gone through the fleſhy part of his arm, he had neither pain nor trouble with it. The 5th they weighed anchor, having called the bay the Bay of Iſlands: they caught but few fiſh while they laid there, yet had plenty from the natives, owing to the immenſe ſize of their nets, which were much larger than the ſeins on board the King's ſhips: they are two or three hundred fathom long, and made of a kind of graſs which is remarkably ſtrong. They have ſuch quantities of them that they lie piled up in heaps upon the beach.

Dec. 7th more canoes came off, but the wind ſerving, the Captain did not wait for them. The 8th they tacked and ſtood in for the ſhore, being viſited by ſeveral canoes, with whom they traded. Theſe Indians informed them, that at the north-north-weſt there was an extenſive country called Ulimaroa, where the inhabitants lived upon hogs, or *Booah*, the name given to them alſo by the inhabitants of Otaheite: they ſaw here ſeveral plantations of the cloth-tree. On the 10th, after beating to windward, the land ſeemed low and barren, but

but was inhabited. The next morning they ſtood in, and the Captain named a mountain in ſight Mount Camel. The 16th they were off the northern extremity of New Zealand: it lies in latitude 34 degrees 22 minutes ſouth, and longitude 186 degrees 55 minutes weſt. The 30th they ſaw land, which was thought to be Cape Maria Van Diemen of Taſman.

Jan 1, 1770, they ſtood to the eaſtward, and the 3d ſaw land again, high and flat, extending away to the ſouth-eaſt as far as the eye could ſee. They were three weeks in making ten leagues, and at Midſummer met with ſuch a gale in latitude 35, that the Captain never experienced its equal. The 9th they were abreaſt of a point the Captain called Woodyhead; and another which he called Albatroſs Point; about two leagues diſtance from which was a remarkable high mountain, equal in height to that of Teneriffe, the ſummit of which was covered with ſnow: he called it Mount Egmont. It is in ſouth latitude 39 degrees 16 minutes, and weſt longitude 185 degrees 15 minutes: the country round it is pleaſant, preſenting an agreeable verdure, interſected with woods. The Captain propoſed careening the ſhip here, and taking in wood and water, and on the 15th ſteered for an inlet. The Endeavour anchored in a commodious part of a bay, having an Indian town in ſight; the people of whom waved their hands, as if to invite them to land. In paſſing the point they obſerved an armed centinel on duty, who was twice relieved. Four canoes came to the ſhip, but only one old man, againſt his countrymens' advice, came on board: he was received with much hoſpitality. The Captain and the other gentlemen went on ſhore, were they met with plenty of wood and water, and were very ſucceſsful in fiſhing, catching ſome hundred weight in a ſhort time.

The

Digitized by Google

The 16th the people were engaged in careening the ſhip, when three canoes came off with many Indians, who brought ſome women with them; notwithſtanding which they proved hoſtile, endeavouring to ſtop the longboat that was on ſhore for water: ſome ſhot were fired over them which frightened them; however, in trading, one ſnatched ſome paper from one of the ſhip's company, and put himſelf in menacing poſture. Preſently ſome ſmall ſhot hit him, and put an end to trading. Tupia, however, continued to converſe with them, and was directed to enquire if they had ever ſeen ſuch a ſhip before: they replied they had not, nor ever heard of ſuch a one; though Taſman certainly touched here, for they were now only 15 miles ſouth from his Murderers Bay. The plenty of fiſh here was very great: they had cuttle fiſh, large breams, ſmall grey breams, baracootes, flying gurnards, horſe mackarel, dog-fiſh, ſoles, dabs, mullets, drums, ſcorpenas, or rock-fiſh, cole-fiſh, ſhags, chimeras, &c. The natives catch them by extending a cylindrical net by ſeveral hoops at the bottom, contracted at top: the fiſh going in to feed upon the bait are caught in great abundance. The birds here are alſo very numerous, particularly parrots, wood-pigeons, water-hens, hanks, and innumerable ſinging birds. An herb, a ſpecies of Philadelphus, was uſed inſtead of tea; and a plant called Teegoome, which looks like a rug-cloak, the natives uſe for garments. The cove where the ſhip lay was perfectly environed with wood; and ſupplejacks are ſo numerous that it is not eaſy to force a way through them. The tops of the hills are covered with fern. The women, who were in the canoes, wore their hair differently from any yet ſeen; they had a bunch of black feathers tied on the top of the head, which greatly increaſed its height. The Captain and the naturaliſts viſiting another cove

Digitized by Google

cove found a family of Indians, who were greatly alarmed at their approach. From the proviſions of this family, it was found that theſe people were canibals; for in their baſkets were ſeveral human bones, that had been lately dreſſed and picked. It appeared that a ſhort time before, ſix of their enemies having fallen into their hands, they had killed four and eaten them, and the other two were drowned in eſcaping. They made no ſecret of this cuſtom, but anſwered Tupia's enquiries, who was deſired to aſcertain the fact with great compoſure; and gave him to underſtand that the food was delicious. A woman having been ſeen floating upon the water, they were aſked why they did not eat her? they replied that ſhe was one of their own people, and they never eat any but their enemies; beſides, ſhe had died of diſeaſe. Mr. Banks ſtill pretended not to believe it, upon which one of the Indians drew the bone of a man's arm through his mouth, which bone he had the curioſity to bring away. One of the women had her arms and legs cut in a ſhocking manner, having wounded herſelf ſo on the loſs of her huſband, who had been killed and eaten by the enemy. Some of them brought four ſkulls one day, which they ſeemed to put an high value on; the brains had been taken out and eaten.

The number of ſinging-birds here were amazing: they began when it grew dark, and ſerenaded the gentlemen all night, with a melody exceeding every thing of the kind in Europe. The 18th ſome of the ſeamen being on ſhore, found three human hip-bones cloſe to an oven; and other marks of what the repaſt had been. Next day the forge was ſet up to repair the iron-work, and ſome Indians viſited the ſhip with plenty of fiſh, which they changed very fairly for nails.

The 20th Mr. Banks bought a man's head of an old Indian, which however he was very unwilling

Digitized by Google

willing to part with: the ſkull had been fractured by a blow, and the brains were extracted. From the care with which they keep the ſkulls free from putrefaction, and the reluctance with which they parted with them, it was ſuppoſed they kept them like the ſcalps of the North Americans, as trophies of war. They did not this day meet with any of the natives: the ground was all uncultivated, but they found a very good harbour. The day following the ſhip's company were allowed to employ themſelves on ſhore how they liked, and the gentlemen were very ſucceſsful in fiſhing. Some of the company in their excurſion met with a fortification on level ground, but ſurrounded by two or three wide ditches, with a draw-bridge, and though ſimple in its ſtructure, was capable of anſwering every purpoſe againſt the arms of the natives. Within the ditches there was a fence of ſtakes. The taking one of theſe fortifications, or a deciſive victory, is attended with the total depopulation of the diſtrict, as the vanquiſhed and the proviſions are devoured by the victors.

The 22d was employed by the naturaliſts in collecting plants: the Captain made ſome obſervations on the coaſt, where he diſcovered many iſlands, but very barren; the few people there were living upon fiſh. The 24th they viſited a hippah, ſituated upon a very high rock, hollow underneath, and forming a very fine natural arch, one ſide of which joined the land, and the other roſe out of the ſea. The natives received them with great civility, and ſhewed them every thing they were deſirous of ſeeing. It was partly ſurrounded by a palliſade of ſtakes, and had a fighting-ſtage. Tupia learned from them, that one of the Endeavour's officers being in a boat, ſome canoes came off to him, and he thinking they were enemies, fired at them with ball, with which one of them was wounded; yet their intentions were entirely friendly.

Digitized by Google

The 25th the Captain and the naturaliſts went on ſhore to ſhoot, when they met with a numerous family fiſhing in the creeks: they were very civil, and received ſome preſents. Next day the Captain went to view the ſtreight that paſſes between the eaſtern and weſtern ſeas: for this purpoſe he went up a high hill; but the weather being cloudy, he could not ſee to a diſtance. They erected a pile, leaving in it muſquet-balls, ſmall-ſhot, beads, &c. as a teſtimonial to future Europeans, that others had been there before them. On their return, they met with another Indian family, who behaved very reſpectfully, and aſſiſted them in getting water. They likewiſe viſited another hippah, on a rock that was almoſt inacceſſible; it contained houſes, and had like the others a fighting-ſtage: they made preſents to the inhabitants, who gave them ſome dried fiſh in return.

The 27th and 28th the crew was buſied on board the ſhip in getting her ready for the ſea. The next day they were viſited by ſome Indians. The 30th two poſts were ſet up, inſcribed with the ſhip's name, &c. with the union-flag on them; and the inhabitants underſtanding that they were meant as memorials of the ſhip's having been there, promiſed never to deſtroy them. The Captain then named the place *Queen Charlotte's Sound*, and a bottle of wine was drank to the Queen's health. The 31ſt the ſhip received ſome damage in a ſtorm, which was however repaired the 2d, 3d, and 4th of February, when they prepared for departing, and bought more fiſh of the natives. They got under ſail the 5th, but the wind dying away, they came again to an anchor. Topaa, an old Indian, who had been very friendly, viſited them again to take his leave, when they learned from him, that they had a tradition of a ſmall veſſel coming from a place, called Ulimaroa (a diſtant country to the north) but there were

Digitized by Google

were only four men in her, who were killed as ſoon as they came on ſhore.

The naturaliſts went again in ſearch of plants, when they met with a more amiable Indian family, than any they had ſeen yet: among them was a widow, and a pretty youth about ten years old. She had lately loſt her huſband, and was weeping for him with tears of blood. They behaved with great civility, and would have had the gentlemen ſtay all night; but as they expected the ſhip to ſail, they were obliged to refuſe it. This family was much the moſt enlightened and intelligent yet met with, ſo that they learned more from them in one day, than from many others in ſeveral.

February 6th the Endeavour ſailed out of the bay, which they called Cannibal Bay. The natives about the ſound are not above four hundred in number: they are ſcattered in ſmall villages, and live upon fern-root and fiſh, the latter of which was the only thing they had to ſell, and having ſome notion of the uſe of iron, they received nails for their fiſh: paper they rejected, when they found it would not hold water; cloth of Otaheite they did not value ſo much as that of England. The timber here is admirably fine, and fit for every purpoſe, except maſts, for which it is too heavy: beſides fiſh, there is wild fowl in plenty.

Leaving the ſound they ſteered eaſtward: about ſix o'clock in the evening, they were greatly alarmed at being hurried by a current very cloſe to an iſland, ſo that they were in the moſt imminent danger of the ſhip being daſhed in pieces on the rocks, but were ſaved by veering one hundred and fifty fathoms of cable, and the next morning were carried through the ſtreight with great velocity: this ſtreight was called by the ſhip's company *Cook's Streight*, it is about thirteen miles long and fourteen broad. The

8th

Digitized by Google

8th they were off a cape, which they called Cape Palliſer: three canoes came off with ſeveral Indians in them, that made a good appearance. They came on board as ſoon as invited, and behaved very civilly, and a mutual exchange of preſents was made. They aſked for *Whow* (nails,) from whence it was imagined, they had heard of the ſhip when more to the northward; which courſe they now ſteered, in order to determine whether the northern part of New Zealand was an iſland: a queſtion which was determined the 9th, by ſeeing the part of the coaſt they had before touched at. The 14th of February ſixty Indians in four double canoes came near the ſhip, which they looked at with great admiration. Tupia endeavoured to perſuade them to come nearer; but they would not, and retreated towards the ſhore.

The 17th they ſaw an iſland, which was called after Mr. Banks: it was inhabited. No farther ſigns of land appearing to the ſouthward, they ſtood weſt till the 23d. When it was a calm, Mr. Banks took the opportunity to go a ſhooting in his boat, when he killed ſome Port Egmont hens, the firſt they had ſeen on this coaſt. The 25th they were off Cape Saunders, in ſouth latitude 45 degrees 35 minutes. The ſhore here is very pleaſant, being covered with verdure, and having many trees; but they ſaw no inhabitants. March 4th they ſaw ſeveral whales and ſeals. The ſouthern point of land, they called South Cape, and it proved to be the moſt ſoutherly point of all New Zealand.

Standing north they paſſed, on the 14th, the ſmall narrow opening in the land, which appeared to be a good harbour: behind it were mountains covered with ſnow. The 18th in the morning, they obobſerved the vallies as well as the mountains covered with ſnow, which they ſuppoſed had fallen in the night, as they had rain at ſea.

They

Digitized by Google

They had now almoſt paſſed the whole of the north-weſt coaſt of the ſouthern diviſion of New Zealand. The face of all this part of the country, conſiſted of nothing but a ridge of rocks and mountains of a ſtupendous height, totally barren and naked, except where covered with ſnow: nothing can be imagined more deſolate, than the appearance of this coaſt. By the 27th they had circumnavigated the whole country, and determined to leave it, as ſoon as they had taken in water. The Captain went on ſhore in the longboat, and found an excellent watering-place, and a proper birth for the ſhip: and they began the works of wooding and watering. The 30th the Captain and the naturaliſts went in the pinnace to examine the bay; the latter found many new plants. They ſaw no Indians, but ſome huts which ſeemed to have been deſerted a long time. When they returned on board, the wood and water were finiſhed, and the ſhip ready to ſail. The Captain called a council of his officers to conſult what paſſage they ſhould take to England; when it was determined for the Eaſt-Indies by way of New Holland.

March 31ſt 1770, they took their departure from an eaſt point, which they called Cape Farewell. Between an iſland and Cape Farewell is a bay, which they called Blind Bay, and which Captain Cook ſuppoſes to be Murderers Bay in Taſman's voyage.

Before the Captain quits New Zealand, he gives a general account of the country, and its productions.

Abel Janſen Taſman, was the firſt European that made a diſcovery of *New Zealand*, to which he gave the name of *Staaten Land*. He never went on ſhore, as the Indians attacked him as ſoon as he came to an anchor in Murderer's Bay. From that time, December 1642, till the preſent voyage, the whole country, except the ſmall part of it Taſman ſaw, remained totally unknown, and has been ſuppoſed to be

be part of a ſouthern continent; but it now proves to be two large iſlands ſeparated by a ſtreight.

The ſituation is between 34 and 48 degrees of ſouth latitude, and 181 and 194 degrees of weſt longitude. The natives call the northern iſland Eahei-nomauive, and the ſouthern Tovy Poenamoo.

The northern, though hilly and in ſome places mountainous, is exceedingly well wooded, and every valley has a rivulet. The ſoil is light, but ſo fertile as to be well adapted to the plentiful production of all ſorts of fruits, plants, and corn of Europe; the inhabitants of which, if a ſettlement ſhould be effected, might ſupply themſelves with the neceſſaries and even luxuries of life, without any extraordinary exertions of induſtry. As to climate, the ſummer is more equally warm, though not hotter than in England; for the naturaliſts imagined, from the vegetables they found, that the winter is not ſo ſevere.

Dogs and rats are the only quadrupeds they ſaw, the latter were but few. The firſt are bred merely for being eaten. There are ſeals and whales on the coaſt. The birds are hawks, owls, quails; and the number of ſinging-birds is very great. Ducks and ſhags abound, and are like thoſe of Europe. Upon the coaſt are ſheer-waters, albatroſſes, pintados, and penguins. The inſects are fleſh-flies, beetles, butterflies, ſand-flies, and muſchetos.

The ſouthern diviſion of the country is barren, very mountainous, and almoſt deſtitute of inhabitants. The ſea, which waſhes both iſlands, abounds in great plenty and variety of fiſh. The ſhip ſcarce ever came to anchor, but they caught enough with hook and line for the whole crew; and when they hauled the ſeine, every meſs in the ſhip ſalted enough for ſeveral weeks uſe. Among them were ſeveral ſorts, that had never been ſeen before. The moſt de-

Digitized by Google

delicious was the ſea cray-fiſh. They had ſeveral kinds of ſkate, and a ſort of dog-fiſh of a better flavour than the ſkate of England. Eels, congers, clams, oyſters, cockles, and flat-fiſh, like ſoles and flounders, were found in great plenty.

The foreſts of New Zealand are filled with ſome of the fineſt timber in the world; large, ſtrait, and clean. One ſort, of the ſize of an oak, is diſtinguiſhed by ſcarlet flowers: moſt of the ſorts are unknown in Europe. Indeed, out of above four hundred ſpecies of plants, all were unknown in England, except garden-nightſhade, ſow-thiſtle, two or three kinds of fern, and one or two ſorts of graſs. Wild cellery, and a ſort of creſſes abounded on the ſea ſhore. Of cultivated plants for eating, there are only coccos, yams, and ſweet potatoes: of the two latter the Indians have plantations of many acres. They alſo cultivate the gourd, and they have the Chineſe paper-mulberry, though not in any abundance. They have but one ſhrub that yields fruit, which is a taſteleſs berry. The moſt remarkable and moſt uſeful of all their plants, is a new ſort of hemp or flax: there are two kinds of it, one yellow, the other red, and both reſemble the leaves of flags. Of theſe they make their lines and cordage, far exceeding in ſtrength any thing in Europe. Their nets are made of them: their common habits alſo from the leaves; and finer ones from the fibres. This plant grows both on high lands and in bogs, but the latter ſeems the beſt for it.

There was reaſon to believe that no part of the country, but the ſea coaſt, was inhabited; the number of people is therefore vaſtly diſproportioned to the extent of the country. The Captain and the other gentlemen were of opinion, that a colony might be very advantageouſly ſettled there.

The New Zealanders are of a ſize larger than the Europeans. Their complexion is not browner than

Digitized by Google

that of a Spaniard. They are ſlender in their form, but not lazy; they are ſhort, well ſhaped, and admirably vigorous and active. The women have not the delicacy of the Europeans, but their voice is ſingularly ſoft, which was the circumſtance by which they were moſtly diſtinguiſhed, for their dreſs is the ſame as the mens. The hair of both ſexes is generally black, and their teeth white and even. Their features are regular; their health uninterrupted to a very advanced age. In diſpoſition they are perfectly gentle, and treat each other with the greateſt kindneſs; yet are they perpetually at war, which may poſſibly be owing to their want of food. They have neither black cattle, ſheep, hogs, nor goats; thus they are obliged to depend on fiſh, which is not always to be had. Their yams and potatoes are a great aſſiſtance to them, and if they were to fail, a famine would be the conſequence: this ſituation may poſſibly have been the origin of the cuſtom of eating their enemies.

Notwithſtanding this practice, the circumſtances and temper of theſe people are much in favour of thoſe who ſhall ſettle among them as a colony. They are in need of protection: and their diſpoſitions are ſo pleaſing, that nothing would be eaſier than to ſecure their friendſhip by kindneſs.

The New Zealanders are as reſerved in their behaviour and converſation as the moſt polite nations in Europe. The women, indeed, were not impregnable; but then a temporary marriage was neceſſary, that is, a verbal agreement. If any of the Engliſh paid his addreſſes to a young woman, he found the conſent of her friends neceſſary, which a ſmall preſent ſecured. This done, he was obliged to treat the lady with much delicacy. One of the gentlemen having ſpoken to a family of ſome rank upon this head, received the following anſwer. "Any "of theſe young ladies will think themſelves ho-

"noured

"noured by your addreſſes, but you muſt firſt "make me a ſuitable preſent, and you muſt then "come and ſleep with us on ſhore, for day-light "muſt by no means be a witneſs of what paſſes "between you."

The New Zealanders anoint their hair with oil melted from the fat of fiſh or birds. The poor among them uſe that which is ſo rancid as to ſmell very diſagreeably, but the higher rank uſe that only which is freſh. They wear combs both of bone and wood, which they ſtick into their hair by way of ornament. The men tie it in a bunch on the top of the head, ſtuck through with feathers. Their beards are ſhort. The women wear their hair flowing upon their ſhoulders, and ſome of them cut ſhort. Both ſexes tattaw their bodies. They likewiſe paint their bodies by rubbing them with red ochre, either dry or mixed with oil.

They form their habits of the leaves of the flag ſplit into ſlips, which are woven into a ſort of matting. They tie one piece over the ſhoulders, which reaches to the knees, and another piece wrapped round the waiſt falls almoſt to the ground.

Beſides this matting for dreſs, they have two kinds of cloth, one of which is as coarſe, but beyond all compariſon ſtronger, than Engliſh canvaſs; the other, which is formed of the fibres of the ſame plant drawn into threads: both theſe ſorts have borders of different colours like girls ſamplars, but finiſhed with very great neatneſs.

What is remarkable, the women are leſs ſolicitous about dreſs than the men, eſpecially about the hair: their lower garments they wear very modeſtly, and when they go a fiſhing are careful that the men ſhould not ſee them. Some of the ſhip's crew once ſurpriſed them in this ſituation: ſome directly hid among the rocks, and others made themſelves an apron of weeds under the water.

Both

Digitized by Google

Both ſexes bore the ears, wear in them feathers, cloth, bone, and bits of wood; many put the nails they received to this uſe.

They ſhew leſs ingenuity in the ſtructure of their houſes, than in any thing elſe belonging to them: they are from ſixteen to twenty feet long, ten or twelve wide, and ſix or eight high. They are built of ſmall ſticks, with dry graſs firmly wattled among them. Some are lined with the bark of trees, and the ridge is formed by a pole which goes from one end to the other. For a door, they have a hole no higher than to admit a perſon crawling. Near it is a ſquare hole which ſerves both for window and chimney; near which is the fire-place, made in a hollow ſquare in the floor, incloſed with wood or ſtone. Near the walls the ground is covered with ſtraw, which ſerves them for beds.

The chiefs that can afford it have three or four houſes encloſed within a court-yard. They have no other furniture than their cloaths, arms, feathers, a few ill-made tools, and a cheſt to hold them. Their hammers to beat fern-root, gourds to hold water, and baſkets to contain proviſions, are placed without-doors. Notwithſtanding their ſleeping warm enough in theſe houſes, yet, when they are in ſearch of fern-root, or fiſhing, they pay no regard to the inclemency of the weather, ſleeping under any buſh they find, without the leaſt covering. Of birds, the chief they feed on are albatroſſes, penguins, &c. Whatever they eat is roaſted or baked, having no veſſel in which water can be boiled.

In the northern parts of the country there are many plantations of coccos, potatoes, and yams, but none in the ſouthern. The Indians drink nothing but water, and enjoy perfect and uninterrupted health; their bodies being free from humours, their wounds preſently heal without any medicinal applications.

Digitized by Google

applications. People of the greateſt age have no other ſigns of it than the loſs of their hair and teeth, and ſome failure in muſcular ſtrength; their health and cheerfulneſs equal thoſe of the youngeſt.

The New Zealand canoes are not unlike the whale-boats of New England, being long and narrow. Thoſe for war are larger than the reſt, and will hold from thirty to a hundred men. One in Tolaga bay meaſured ſeventy feet long, ſix wide, and four deep. It was ſharp at the bottom: the planks of three lengths, two or three inches thick, tied firmly together with ſtrong plaiting: each ſide conſiſted of one entire plank about twelve inches broad, and about one and a half thick, fitted together with great ſtrength and ingenuity: ſhort planks were faſtened acroſs to keep the whole the better together. Some they ſaw that were made entirely of one tree hollowed by fire. All their canoes have ſomething of ornament about them: the ſmall fiſhing ones have the figure of a man's head at the head and ſtern, with a deformed enormous tongue thruſt out. The greater ones have open-work and fringes of black feathers, which give them a moſt elegant appearance; with tufts of white feathers in the ſide boards.

Their paddles are five or ſix feet long; the blade of which is a long-oval gradually decreaſing till it reaches the handle. The quickneſs with which they row with them is ſurprizing. For a ſail, they have a ſort of mat extended between two upright poles, one of which is fixed on each ſide. They ſteer by two men holding each a paddle, and ſitting in the ſtern; but they can only ſail before the wind.

The tools, with which they build theſe canoes, are axes, adzes, and chiſels, which laſt they uſe for a gimblet too. The chiſels are made of jaſper, or the bone of a man's arm, and the axes and adzes of a hard black ſtone. Having no tool to

Digitized by Google

ſharpen their jaſper ones, they uſe them till they are blunt and then throw them away. With a ſmall bit of jaſper they bored holes through the glaſs that was given them.

The tillage of their ground is excellent. At Tegadoo their crops were juſt put into the ground, and the ſurface of the field was as ſmooth as a garden: the roots were ranged in regular lines, and to every root there remained a hillock. Inſtead of a ſpade they have for this work no better tool than a long narrow ſtake ſharpened to an edge at bottom, with a piece fixed acroſs a little above it, for driving it into the ground with the foot. The work is not laborious from the lightneſs of the ſoil, ſo that with this inſtrument only they will turn up pieces of ground ſo large as ſeven acres extent.

Their great nets, which are as we mentioned before of a prodigious ſize, are produced by the labour of a whole village, and belong to them in joint-property. Their fiſh-hooks are made of ſhell or bone, and they have well-made baſkets of wicker-work to hold the fiſh.

Their implements of war are ſpears, darts, battle-axes, and the patoo-patoo. The ſpear, which is pointed at both ends, is ſixteen feet long; they hold it in the middle, and throw it with ſuch ſtrength and dexterity that we could match them with nothing but a loaded muſket. The patoo-patoo is faſtened to the wriſt with ſtraps that it may not be wrenched from them, and they fight, whether on ſhore or in boats, hand to hand, ſo that their engagements muſt be very dreadful. In their war-dance their motions are numerous, their limbs are diſtorted, and their faces horridly agitated. They loll out their tongue to a vaſt length, and their eye-lids are drawn ſo as to form a circle round the eye: they accompany it with a ſong which is ſung in concert: every ſtrain ending with a loud and deep

ſigh.

Digitized by Google

ſigh. There is an activity and vigour in their dancing, which is truly admirable; and their idea of keeping time in muſic is ſuch, that ſixty or eighty paddles will ſtrike at once the ſides of a boat, and make but one noiſe.

They ſing in peace, but do not dance to it: and the women, whoſe voices are exceedingly harmonious and ſoft, ſing in a melodious but mournful manner, and their ſongs appear as if ſung in parts. Their muſical inſtruments are a ſhell, from which they produce a ſound reſembling that made by a common horn, and a wooden pipe like a child's whiſtle.

Their towns are all fortified, and in them they chiefly reſide. On the ſides of hills were erected long ſtages ſupplied with darts and ſtones, which were thought to be retreats in time of battle, from which, by their elevated ſituation, they can combat the enemy with theſe weapons to great advantage. In ſuch repoſitories they ſtore their dried fiſh and fern-root.

It was ſuppoſed that the employment of the men conſiſted in cultivating the ground, making nets, catching birds, and fiſhing; while the women were engaged in weaving cloth, procuring fern-roots, and ſhell-fiſh, and dreſſing food.

As to their religion, they acknowledge one ſuperior being, and ſeveral ſubordinate. Their mode of worſhip, if any, was not learned, nor was any place for that purpoſe ſeen. There was indeed a ſmall ſquare area encompaſſed with ſtones, in the middle of which hung a baſket of fern-roots on one of their ſpades, which they ſaid was an offering to their gods, in the hope of a plentiful crop of proviſion.

A great ſimilitude was obſerved between the dreſs, furniture, boats, and nets of theſe people, and thoſe of the inhabitants of the South-Sea iſlands, which furniſhed a ſtrong proof, that the common anceſtors

Digitized by Google

of both were the ſame. Indeed they both have a tradition, that their anceſtors migrated from another country many ages ſince, and they both agree, that this country was called *Heawige*. A yet ſtronger proof will ariſe from the ſimilitude of their language.

Zea Zealand.	*Otaheite.*	
Whahine,	Aheine,	*A woman.*
Taata,	Tata,	*People.*
Heoo-oo,	Eraowroo,	*The hair.*
Erai,	Irai,	*The brow.*
Mata,	Matau,	*The eyes.*
Ahewh,	Eahoo,	*The noſe.*
Paparinga,	Paparea,	*The cheeks.*
Ateraboo,	Eoboo,	*The belly.*
Apeto,	Pito,	*The navel.*
Heromai,	Harremai,	*Come hither.*
Taro,	Taro,	*Coccos.*
Tahai,	Tohe,	*One.*
Bua,	Rooa,	*Two.*
Toron,	Torhoo,	*Three.*
Ha,	Ha,	*Four.*
Etu,	Hitoo,	*Seven.*
Iva,	Iva,	*Nine.*
Heneaho,	Enaeho,	*The teeth.*

Captain Cook ſailed from Cape Fairwell on the 31ſt of March 1770, and had fine weather, and a fair wind till the 9th of April, when they ſaw a tropic bird in latitude 38 degrees 29 minutes ſouth: a ſight very unuſual in ſo high a latitude. The 19th they diſcovered land, which they called *Point Hicks*, from the firſt Lieutenant, who ſaw it firſt: ſoon after they ſaw more land, the whole low and even, and the inland parts green, and covered with wood. The day following they had a diſtant view of the country, which was in general covered with wood, and inter-

Digitized by Google

interſperſed with ſeveral ſmall lawns. It appeared to be inhabited, as ſmoke was ſeen in ſeveral places. Next morning they ſaw high land, and called it Mount Dromedary. The 22d they were ſo near the ſhore, as to ſee ſeveral of the inhabitants on the coaſt, who were of a dark complexion, if not perfect negroes.

The Captain gave the name of Cape George to a point of land diſcovered on Saint George's day, about two leagues to the north, of which the ſea formed a bay. The 27th they ſaw ſeveral inhabitants walking along the ſhore, four of them carrying a canoe on their ſhoulders; but as they did not attempt coming off to the ſhip, the Captain took Meſſieurs Banks and Solander with Tupia in the yawl, and were rowed towards the natives. The Indians ſat on the rocks, till the boat was within a quarter of a mile of them, and then ran away into the woods. The boat could not land for the ſurf. Their canoes reſembled the ſmaller ſort at New Zealand. Great numbers of cabbage-trees were ſeen on the ſhore, the reſt were palm-trees: there was no underwood. In the evening they returned to the ſhip, and ſailed to the northward, where they ſaw ſeveral people on ſhore round a fire, who on their approach retired to an eminence. The pinnace being ſent a-head to ſound, the Indians walked along the ſhore a-breaſt of it. They were armed with long pikes, and a weapon reſembling a ſcymetar, and by various ſigns and words, invited the crew to land. Others ſeemed in their attitudes to defy the ſhip; the bodies, thighs, and legs of theſe were painted with white ſtreaks, and their faces were almoſt covered with a white powder.

The ſhip coming to anchor, a few huts were obſerved, in which were ſome of the natives: ſome canoes were likewiſe ſeen, in each of which was a man buſily employed in ſtriking fiſh with a kind of ſpear.

Digitized by Google

They saw an old woman and three children come out of a wood laden with fuel for a fire: all of them were naked. The old woman frequently looked at the ship with the utmost indifference: and as soon as she had made a fire, the fishermen brought their canoes on shore, and they set about dressing their fish with as much composure, as if a ship had been no extraordinary sight.

The boats being manned, the Captain took the gentlemen and Tupia with him in order to land: when near the shore, two men advanced as if to prevent their landing; they were armed differently. They called out in a loud harsh tone, *warra, warra, wai*, which Tupia did not understand. The Captain threw them beads, nails, &c. which they took up, and seemed much pleased with. He made signs that he wanted water, and that no harm should be done them; upon which they signed to the crew to land: on their offering to do it, however, they again opposed them. A musket was then fired between them, at the report of which they startled, but one threw a stone at the boat: small shot were fired at him, which hit him on the legs, upon which they retired to the houses, which stood at a small distance. Upon their landing, the wounded man and another returned, with a kind of shield of an oval figure, painted white in the middle, with two holes in it to see through. Advancing with intrepidity, they both threw their lances at the crew: a musket being fired, they threw another lance, and then took to their heels. The crew landing, went to the huts, in one of which they found the children secreted behind some bark: they did not however know they had been seen, and having thrown some ribbons, beads, and pieces of cloth into the huts; they took several lances and reimbarked. The canoes of these New Hollanders were about thirteen feet long, made of the bark of a single tree, tied up at the ends, and kept

Digitized by Google

kept open in the middle by ſticks: their paddles are very ſmall, and they uſe two at a time.

The ſhip ſailed to the north ſide of the bay, where they found plenty of good water. On viewing the hut, where they had ſeen the children, they found that all the Indians were fled, and their preſents all left where they were. The Captain went in the pinnace to inſpect the bay, and ſaw ſeveral of the natives; but they all fled on his approach. Some men having been ſent to get wood and water, they no ſooner came on board to dinner, than the natives came down to examine the caſks; which they did with great attention, but did not offer to remove them. In the afternoon, Mr. Hicks at the head of a party, was near twenty of them: he held out preſents, and attempted by every means he could think to bring on an intercourſe; but all in vain. The Captain and the naturaliſts going to fiſh in a cove, caught between three and four hundred weight of fiſh in four hauls.

The 30th the natives came down to the huts before it was light, and were heard to ſhout very loud. The 1ſt of May, the Captain and the naturaliſts went on ſhore, and making an excurſion about the country, found it very pleaſant, agreeably variegated with wood and lawn. The trees were ſtrait and tall, and had no underwood, ſo that the country might be cultivated without cutting down one of them. The graſs grows in large tufts, almoſt cloſe to each other, and there is great plenty of it. They met with many places, where the inhabitants had ſlept without ſhelter. The trees abound in a vaſt variety of beautiful birds, among which were cockatoos, parokets, and lorikets, which flew in large flocks.

The next day they went on ſhore again, when many plants were found by Mr. Banks and Doctor Solander. They ſaw ſeveral parties of Indians, but

Digitized by Google

ran away on their approach. Tupia having learned to ſhoot, frequently ſtrayed alone to ſhoot parrots, and the Indians fled from him, with as much precipitation as from the Engliſh.

The day after, the Captain and the gentlemen went to the head of the bay, to try to form ſome connection with the Indians. On their landing, they found ſome on ſhore, who immediately took to their canoes, and rowed off. They went up the country, where they found the ſoil to be a deep black mould, calculated for all ſorts of productions of grain, &c. They ſaw ſome of the fineſt meadows that were ever beheld, and a few rocky places; the ſtone of which, is ſandy, and ſeemed to be admirably adapted for building. Returning to the boat, they ſaw a fire at a diſtance, and went towards it; but the Indians fled. Near the beach, they found ſeven canoes, and as many fires, from whence they judged, that each fiſherman had dreſſed his own dinner: there were oyſters lying around, and ſome muſcles roaſting. They eat of theſe fiſh, and left ſome trifles in return. In the evening Mr. Banks went out a ſhooting, and ſaw many quails, which proved the ſame kind as thoſe in England. The next day the Captain went up the country on the north ſide of the bay, which he found to reſemble the moory grounds of England; but the land was thinly covered with plants about ſixteen inches high. The hills riſe gradually into great ridges, and between them is marſhy ground. The fiſhing-party this day met great ſucceſs, and the ſecond Lieutenant ſtruck a fiſh, which weighed near two hundred and fifty pounds. The next morning a fiſh of the ſame kind was catched, which weighed three hundred and fifty pounds.

The name of Botany Bay was given to this place, from the great number of non-deſcript plants found by Meſſieurs Banks and Solander. The country pro-

Digitized by Google

produces but two kinds of wood, which may be deemed timber; one tall and ſtrait like the pine, the other hard, heavy, and dark-coloured like lignum vitæ, and bears ſome reſemblance to an Engliſh oak. There are many mangroves, ſeveral kinds of palm, and a few ſhrubs: among other birds, crows were found here, exactly like thoſe of England. There is great plenty of water-fowl.

While Captain Cook remained here, the Engliſh colours were diſplayed on ſhore, and the name of the ſhip, with the date of the year, carved on a tree. They ſailed from the bay, on the 6th of May 1770: at noon were off a harbour, which they called Port Jackſon. The 13th they ſaw many fires on a point of land, which they called Smokey Cape. The 15th they ſaw, with the aſſiſtance of their glaſſes, about twenty Indians, each with his bundle of palm-leaves to thatch their houſes. The 22d by the ſame help, they diſcovered that the ground was covered with palm-nut-trees, none of which they had ſeen, ſince they had quitted the iſlands within the tropics. The next morning the Captain, with the naturaliſts and Tupia, went on ſhore to take a view of the country. They landed among many mangroves, and found the neſt of a ſingular kind of ant, as green as graſs, in the branches of the mangroves. When the branches were diſturbed, they came forth in great numbers, and bit the intruder moſt ſeverely. Under the ſhelter of theſe trees, they likewiſe found immenſe numbers of green catterpillars; their bodies covered with hairs, which, on the touch, gave a pain ſimilar to the ſting of a nettle, but much more acute. Theſe inſects ranged themſelves ſide by ſide on the leaves, thirty or forty together, in a very regular manner. Among the ſand-banks, they ſaw many birds larger than ſwans, which they ſuppoſed were pelicans; and they ſhot a kind of buſtard, which weighed ſeventeen pounds. This bird proved very fine food; and from it,

they called the place Buſtard Bay. They likewiſe ſhot a duck of a moſt beautiful plumage, with a white bill. Oyſters of many ſorts were found; and among others, ſome hammer ones of a curious kind. While the gentlemen were in the wood, ſome of the natives came to the beach, viewed the ſhip, and then departed. The Captain ſaw many fires, and going near ſome, found about a dozen ſmall ones, burning near each other: they ſaw ſome ſhells and bones of fiſh juſt eaten, but the people were gone. They found ſome barks, which, from the ſhape, they judged to have been uſed as beds. This kind of encampment was in a thicket, well defended from the wind; but as there was no appearance of a houſe, it was imagined that they ſpent their nights as well as days in the open air. Even Tupia ſhook his head, and called them *Poor wretches!* The next morning they ſailed, and ſaw an amazing number of birds of the pelican kind, ſome of which were five feet high.

The 26th they ſailed among ſome iſlands almoſt barren, and in ſight of mountainous main land. The 28th, being determined to keep the main land cloſe aboard, which continued to tend away to the weſt, they got among another cluſter of iſlands: here they were greatly alarmed, having on a ſudden but three fathom water: they immediately put the ſhip about, and hoiſted out the boats; they then ſtood to the weſt with an eaſy ſail, and in the evening came to the entrance of a bay. On the 29th the Maſter was ſent with two boats to ſound, which making a ſignal, the ſhip ſoon came to anchor. From the flood and ebb of tide, they imagined this bay to be the entrance of a river, which ran up the country: here therefore the Captain deſigned to lay the ſhip aſhore, and clean her bottom, landing in ſearch of a proper place for that purpoſe.

In the excurſion the naturaliſts attended the Captain. Walking was exceedingly troubleſome, the ground

Digitized by Google

ground was so covered with grass, whose seeds were sharp and bearded, by which means they were continually sticking in their cloaths, and working into the flesh. Musquetos perpetually stung them. They found several places to lay the ship ashore, but no fresh water. They saw many gum-trees, upon which white ants had made nests of clay, as big as a bushel. On another tree they found black ants, which formed their lodging in the body of it, after they had eaten away the pith; yet the trees were in a flourishing state. Butterflies they saw in such incredible numbers, that whatever way they turned, thousands were to be seen in the air, while every bough and twig were covered with them. They also discovered on dry ground, supposed to have been left there by the tide, a fish about the size of a minnow, having two fins, which served as wings, with which it leaped away like a frog: it did not seem to suffer by being out of water, but even to prefer land; for when in water, it leaped on land, pursued its way there; where small stones were above water, it leaped from stone to stone rather than swim.

The 30th the Captain was early on shore, and going up a hill, took a view of the coast and adjacent islands, which leaving, he went with Doctor Solander up an inlet; but bad weather drove them back to the ship. No water being found, they called it Thirsty Sound, and left it the 31st of May. June 1st, being under sail, they saw a great number of islands as far as the eye could reach. The 2d they saw a high promontory, which they called Cape Hillsborough, which seemed to abound in wood and herbage, and varied with hills, plains, and vallies. They saw smoke in several places. The 3d they called another point Cape Conway; the land about which was delightfully variegated with hills and dales, lawns and woods: here they saw a canoe with an out-rigger like those of Otaheite.

Digitized by Google

heite. From this time, till Trinity Sunday, they continued to range along the coaſt without any thing intereſting occurring. They had purſued their navigation for more than thirteen hundred miles on this coaſt among moſt dangerous rock and ſhoals, yet without misfortune: but they now ſaw a point which they called Cape Tribulation: it is in latitude 19 degrees 6 minutes ſouth, and longitude 214 degrees 39 minutes weſt. At ſix in the evening they ſhortened ſail to avoid ſome rocks which were ſeen ahead, and to obſerve whether any land lay in the offing, as they were now near the latitude of the iſlands ſaid to be diſcovered by Quiros. They kept ſtanding off till nine with a fine breeze and bright moon. From fourteen they had got into twenty-one fathom, when they ſuddenly fell to eight fathom. Every man was inſtantly ordered to his ſtation, and they were on the point of anchoring, when they ſuddenly got into deep water again; ſo they thought the danger over, and that they had juſt ſailed over the tail of a ſhoal. They had twenty fathom before ten o'clock; and this depth continuing ſome time, the gentlemen, who had hitherto been on deck, went to bed; but in leſs than an hour the water ſhallowed at once from twenty to ſeventeen fathom, and before ſoundings could be taken, the ſhip ſtruck, and remained fixed, except from the motion given by the ſurge. Every one was inſtantly on deck with countenances expreſſive of the ſtate of their minds. They concluded they ſtruck againſt a rock of coral, the points of which are ſo ſharp, and the ſurface ſo rough, as to grind away whatever is rubbed againſt it.

The ſails being taken in, and boats hoiſted out to examine the depth of water, they found that the ſhip had been carried over a ledge of the rock, and lay in a hollow within it. Finding the water deepeſt aſtern, they carried out the anchor from the ſtarboard quarter, and applied their whole force to the capſtern;

Digitized by Google

ſtern; but in vain. She now beat ſo violently againſt the rock, that the crew could hardly ſtand. The moon ſhone bright; by the light of which they could ſee the ſheathing-boards float from the bottom of the veſſel; till at length the falſe keel followed, ſo that inſtant deſtruction was alone looked for. Their beſt chance ſeemed now to be by lightening her; but as they had ſtruck at high-water, they would have been but where they were after the veſſel ſhould draw as much leſs water, as the water ſunk: their anxiety abated a little on finding the ſhip ſettled to the rocks as the tide ebbed. They then flattered themſelves that if the veſſel ſhould keep together till next tide, they might have ſome chance of floating her. They therefore inſtantly ſtarted the water in the hold, and pumped it up. The decayed ſtores, oil jars, caſks, ballaſt, ſix of their guns, and other things, were thrown overboard, in order to get at the heavier articles: and in this buſineſs, they were employed till day-break, during all which time it was obſerved that not an oath was ſworn, ſo much were the minds of the ſailors impreſſed with a ſenſe of their danger.

At day-light they ſaw land at eight leagues diſtance, but not a ſingle iſland between them and the main, on which part of the crew might have been landed, while the boat went on ſhore with the reſt; ſo that the deſtruction of the greater part muſt be inevitable, as the boats would not carry them all, and a ſubordination in the laſt dreadful moment is forgotten. It happened that the wind died away to a dead calm before noon. As they expected high water at eleven o'clock, every thing was prepared to make another effort to free the ſhip; but the tide fell ſo much ſhort of that in the night, that ſhe did not float by eighteen inches, though they had thrown overboard near fifty tons: upon this account they ſet about throwing overboard every thing that could poſſibly be ſpared.

Digitized by Google

pared. As the tide fell, the water poured in so rapidly that they could hardly keep it under by two pumps constantly going. The midnight tide was now their only hope: accordingly they prepared for another effort to get the ship off. It began to rise at five o'clock: but the leak increased with it to such a degree, that two more pumps were manned, but only one of them would work; three were kept going till 9 o'clock, at which time the ship righted: so much water however had been admitted by the leak, that they expected her to sink the moment she parted from the rock. Their situation was now deplorable beyond description. It was considered, as the boats could not convey them all, that those who might be left on board, were to expect a milder fate than those, who, by gaining the shore, would have no chance, but to linger the remains of life among the rudest savages of the universe; and in a country, where fire-arms would barely enable them to support a wretched existence.

At twenty minutes after ten the ship floated, and was heaved into deep water, when they had the satisfaction of finding she did not admit more water than she had done before; yet as the leak had for a considerable time gained on three pumps, there was now three feet nine inches water in the hold. The men were now so exhausted by constant fatigue of mind and body, that they could not stand to the pump more than five or six minutes at a time; and then threw themselves quite spent on the deck, amidst a stream of water, which came from the pumps. In this manner they worked by turns, till an accident had like to have given them up as victims to despair.

Between the linings of the ship's bottom, which is called the ceiling, and the outside planking, there is a space of about seventeen or eighteen inches. The man that had taken the depth of water in the hold, had

Digitized by Google

had taken it no further than the ceiling, but being now relieved by another perſon, who took the depth to the outſide planking, it appeared by this miſtake, that the leak had ſuddenly gained upon the pumps, the whole ſpace between the plankings. This deprived them of all hope, ſo that they thought their life, for ſo ſhort a ſpace, not worth the labour: the miſtake however was ſoon diſcovered, and the joy ariſing from ſo unexpected a change, inſpired the men with freſh vigour, ſo that by eight in the morning the pumps had gained conſiderably on the leak. By eleven o'clock they got under ſail, and ſtood for the land: but not being able to diſcover the exact ſituation of the leak, they had no proſpect of ſtopping it in the inſide of the veſſel; in this ſituation, one of the midſhipmen propoſed an expedient, which he had ſeen tried with ſucceſs. They took an old ſtudding ſail, and having mixed a large quantity of oakham and wool chopped ſmall, it was ſtitched down in handfulls on the ſail as light as poſſible, with the dung of the ſheep, and other filth. When done, the ſail was drawn under the ſhip by ropes, till it came under the leak, when the ſuction carried in the wool. This experiment ſucceeded ſo well, that inſtead of three pumps, the water was eaſily kept under by one.

At ſix in the evening, they anchored ſeven leagues from ſhore, and found that the ſhip made fifteen inches water, during the night. At nine in the morning, they paſſed two iſlands, which were called *Hope Iſlands*. In the afternoon, the maſter was ſent with two boats to ſound, and ſearch for a harbour, where the ſhip might be repaired. At ſun-ſet they anchored in four fathom, two miles from the ſhore. One of the mates being out in the pinnace returned, and reported that he had found juſt ſuch a harbour, as was wanting.

Next

Digitized by Google

Next morning they failed, and anchored about a mile from the ſhore, when the Captain went to view the harbour, and found it better adapted to their purpoſe, than any they had ſeen, during the whole courſe of their voyage. The weather however for two days would not allow them to enter it.

The crew by this time were much afflicted with the ſcurvy, and Tupia was ſo bad with it, that he had livid ſpots upon his legs. Mr. Green the aſtronomer was ill of the ſame diſorder. The 17th the ſhip was got into harbour, where ſhe was moored along the ſide of a beach, and her anchors, cables, &c. taken out of her.

Next day they raiſed a tent for the ſick, and as ſoon as it was ready for their reception, ſeveral of them were brought on ſhore. Another was built for the proviſions and ſtores, which were landed the ſame day. A boat was diſpatched to fiſh for the refreſhment of the ſick; but ſhe returned without getting any. Tupia employed himſelf in angling; and living entirely on the produce of his induſtry, recovered his health very faſt. Mr. Banks going up the country, ſaw the frames of ſeveral Indian houſes, which appeared to have been ſome time abandoned; and the Captain aſcending one of the higheſt hills, obſerved the high land to be ſtoney and barren, and the low land upon the river full of mangroves.

The Captain ordered the ſmith's forge to be ſet up, and directed the armourer to prepare the neceſſary iron-work; and ordered out the officers, ſtores, water, &c. to lighten the ſhip; and Mr. Banks croſſed the river to view the country, which was little elſe than ſand-hills. There were vaſt numbers of crows and pigeons, of the latter of which, he ſhot ſome that were exceedingly beautiful. The next day, as they were removing the coals, the water ruſhed in near the foremaſt, about three feet from the keel, ſo that it was neceſſary to clear

Digitized by Google

clear the ſhip entirely; they therefore took out all the coals, and the next day warped the ſhip higher up the harbour.

Early on the 22d the tide left the ſhip, and they examined the leak, when it was found that the rocks had cut through four planks into the timbers, and that three other planks were damaged. In theſe breaches, not a ſplinter was to be ſeen, the whole being ſmooth, as if cut away by an inſtrument; but the preſervation of the ſhip, was owing to a very ſingular circumſtance: one of the holes was large enough to have ſunk her, even with eight pumps conſtantly at work; but this hole was in a great meaſure ſtopped up by a fragment of the rock ſticking in it. Some of the interſtices left open by this piece of rock, were ſtopped by the oakham, wool, &c. Beſides the leak, the ſhip's bottom had received much damage.

While the ſmiths were making nails and bolts, the carpenters began to work on the veſſel, and ſome of the crew were ſent acroſs the river to ſhoot pigeons for the ſick. This party ſaw many Indian houſes, and diſcovered a ſpring of freſh water: they likewiſe had ſight of a mouſe-coloured animal, the ſize of a greyhound, and extremely ſwift. On the 23d they ſaw plenty of fiſh, but could catch none. The repairs on the ſtarboard-ſide being finiſhed the next day, the carpenters began the 24th to work under the larboard bow: ſhe was then examined abaft, when it was found, that there her injury was trifling; but the veſſel being in a poſition that threw all the water abaft, and Mr. Banks having removed his whole collection of plants into the bread-room, they were this day found under water, by which unfortunate error ſome were deſtroyed; by great care moſt of them were reſtored. The ſhip being ſo far repaired, they attempted to float her, by laſhing a number of caſks under her bottom: but all being in vain,

Digitized by Google

vain, they waited for the next ſpring-tide. This day a plant was found, the leaves of which were almoſt as good as ſpinnage. They alſo found ſome cabbage-trees, wild plantain, and a purple fruit, the ſize of a pippin, which taſted like a damſon.

The carpenter was now engaged in caulking the ſhip, and the crew in filling water, while the Captain amuſed himſelf in fiſhing for the ſick. The 28th Mr. Banks took ſome of the crew up the country, to ſhew them a plant to uſe for greens, and which in the Weſt-Indies is called Indian Kale.

The day following the fiſhermen were ſo ſucceſsful, that the whole crew had each a pound and half to his ſhare; and a midſhipman ſaw a wolf exactly like thoſe of America. The 30th the Captain aſcended a hill, to take a view of the ſea, when, to his great concern, he ſaw innumerable ſand-banks and ſhoals in every direction; but there was an appearance of a paſſage to the northward. So much fiſh was taken to-day, that every man had two pounds and an half; and plenty of greens were gathered, which being boiled with the peaſe, they reckoned their fare excellent.

July 1ſt all the men had permiſſion to go on ſhore, except one from each meſs to go a fiſhing, who again met with great ſucceſs. The Maſter having been ſent with the pinnace in ſearch of a channel, returned with the news that he had found one. He caught ſome cockles ſo large, that one of them was ſufficient for two men, and likewiſe plenty of other ſhell-fiſh, of which he brought a ſupply to the ſick.

This day they ſucceeded in attempting to float the ſhip, when they found ſhe had ſprung a freſh plank, ſo that ſhe muſt be laid again aſhore. An alligator ſwam by her ſeveral times this day. The 4th ſhe was laid aſhore on a ſand-bank, and the next day floated

Digitized by Google

floated at high-water, and moored off the beach in order to receive the ſtores on board. Mr. Banks and a party having taken a boat up the river on the 6th, with a view to make an excurſion, returned on the 8th: the land was low, and covered with graſs, and ſeemed capable of being cultivated to great advantage. The tide favouring their return in the morning, they loſt no time in getting back to the ſhip. The maſter, who had been ſeven leagues at ſea, brought home three turtles, which he took with a boat-hook, and weighed near eight hundred pounds: he was ſent next morning with proper inſtruments for catching them, and Mr. Banks accompanied him; but not being ſucceſsful, he would not return, ſo Mr. Banks came back in his own little boat. Next morning the ſecond Lieutenant was ſent to bring the Maſter back; ſoon after which, four Indians in a ſmall canoe were ſeen: no notice being taken of them, they advanced gradually till they came along-ſide the ſhip, when the Captain threw them cloaths, nails, paper, &c. of which however they took but little notice. One of the ſailors however throwing them a ſmall fiſh, they were much pleaſed, and intimated that they would bring their companions; upon which they rowed away. In the mean time, Tupia and ſome of the crew, landed on the oppoſite ſhore. Tupia perſuaded ſome of them to lay down their arms, and ſit by him, which they did: trifles were given them, and they were invited on board, but declined it.

Theſe men were of the common ſtature, with very ſmall limbs; their complexion a deep chocolate; their hair black and lank, or curled, but not of the wool-kind; the breaſt and upper lip of one of them were painted with ſtreaks of white, which they called *Carbanda*, and ſome parts of their bodies had been painted red: their teeth were white and even; their eyes

Digitized by Google

eyes bright, and their features rather pleasing; their voices were musical, and they repeated several English words with great readiness.

They renewed their visit next morning, and brought with them another whom they called *Yaparico*, who appeared to be a person of some consequence. Through his nose he had a bone thrust six inches long, and all the natives had their noses bored for the reception of such ornaments. Being all naked, the Captain gave one of them an old shirt, which he bound round his head like a turband. They brought a fish to the ship, supposed to be in payment for one they had received: after staying some time they jumped into their canoe suddenly, being jealous of the gentlemen examining it.

The 12th of July three Indians visited Tupia's tent, and, after some time, one of them went for two others. Some fish was offered them, but they did not seem to care for it; and after eating a little, gave the remainder to Mr. Bank's dog. Some ribbons, with medals suspended, had been hung round their necks, but they were so discoloured with smoke, that they could scarely be known: they slept close to their fires as a security against the musquetos. Their canoe was about ten feet long, and made to hold four persons; and when in shallow water they pushed it with poles. Their lances had only single points, but some were barbed with fish-bones.

On the 14th Mr. Gore shot one of the mouse-coloured animals above-mentioned: it was a young one, and weighed only thirty-eight pounds, but the full-grown ones are as large as a sheep. They called it *Kangaroo*: it is covered with short fur: the head and ears are like those of a hare: they dressed it for dinner, and it proved excellent eating. The ship's crew fed on turtle almost every day, which were finer than those eaten in England.

The

Digitized by Google

The 17th the Captain went into the woods with the naturaliſts, and ſaw four Indians in a canoe, who went on ſhore, and came forwards without ſign of fear. They took ſome beads, and departed, intimating, that they did not chooſe to be followed. Several of them being now intimate with the ſhip's crew, one was deſired to throw his lance, which he did with ſuch dexterity and force, that though it was not above four feet from the ground at the higheſt, it penetrated deeply into a tree at the diſtance of fifty yards. Several of them went on board the ſhip, and were well ſatisfied with their entertainment. The 19th they ſaw ſeveral of the women, who, as well as the men, were quite naked. Several of the natives coming on board the ſhip ſeized a turtle; but it being taken from them, they rowed on ſhore, and, taking a fire-brand, ſet fire to the dry graſs in revenge, which burnt ſo rapidly that it ſcorched a pig to death, burnt part of the ſmith's forge, and would have deſtroyed a tent of Mr. Banks's had not ſome of the men ſpeedily got it out of the way. Some ſmall ſhot being fired at the Indians, they run away. The fire burnt far into the woods, ſo that when the Captain returned on board he ſaw them burning two miles off. Peace was made with the natives ſoon after.

The Maſter was ſent to ſearch for a paſſage to the northward, but in vain. By the night of the 20th the fire had extended many miles on the hills, which in the night made a fine and ſingular appearance. The 22d they killed a turtle, through both ſhoulders of which ſtuck a wooden harpoon, with which the Indians had ſtruck it, and the wound was quite healed. Next day one of the ſeamen, who had ſtrayed from the company, came unexpectedly on four Indians at dinner: though he was much alarmed, he had prudence enough to conceal it; he ſat down with them, offered them his knife, which, having examined, they returned: he

Digitized by Google

would then have left them, but they detained him, till, having felt of his hands and face, they were satisfied he was made of flesh and blood like themselves: they then dismissed him, directing him the nearest way to the ship.

By the 29th the ship was ready for the sea, but there was not water sufficient for her to pass the bar. August 4th they put to sea, the pinnace going ahead to keep sounding. The Captain called the river where they had laid, Endeavour River.

The provisions they got here were turtle, but they went some miles to sea for oysters of three different sorts: mullets, flat-fish, skait, scombri: purslane, wild beans, the tops of cocos, and cabbage-palms. Of quadrupeds there are goats, wolves, pole-cats, &c. Dogs are the only tame animals: among the fowls are kites, crows, hawks, loriquets, cockatoos, parrots, pigeons, and small birds of various kinds, non-descripts: the water-fowls are wild geese, curlieus, hens, whistling ducks which perch on trees, and some few others. The country produces various sorts of wood, and much coarse grass: the whole of it is well watered.

The 4th such a quantity of fish was taken as gave two pound a head to the crew. For six days they struggled for safety among many rocks and shoals, but in vain. Mr. Banks and the Captain went the 11th to visit the largest of three islands, which had been seen from the point the preceding day. From the top of the highest hill they saw a reef of rocks, upon which the sea broke in a dreadful manner. On their return they landed on a low sandy island, which abounded with birds of various kinds, particularly eagles: a nest of young ones they took, and called the island Eagle Island. On this spot they saw the nest of some bird, which was built of sticks on the ground three feet high, and twenty-six round.

The

Digitized by Google

The 13th, they ſailed out to ſea through a narrow and difficult channel: the thought of being in an open ſea was great happineſs to them, having been three months amidſt dreadful ſhoals and rocks. During a run of more than a thouſand miles, they had been obliged to keep ſounding without the intermiſſion of a ſingle minute, which never happened to any ſhip before.

The iſlands they paſſed through, called Iſlands of Direction, abound in turtle and other fiſh; and on the beach were found bamboos, cocoa-nuts, pumice-ſtones, and the ſeeds of plants ſuppoſed to be brought by the trade-wind, as the plants themſelves were not to be found. Having anchored the 14th, they ſteered weſterly in order to get ſight of land, that a paſſage between that land and New Guinea might not be miſſed, if they was any ſuch: ſeeing breakers between the veſſel and the land they laid by, and in the morning they ſaw a dreadful ſurf break at a vaſt height within a mile of the ſhip, towards which the rolling waves carried her with great rapidity. The boats were inſtantly ſent ahead to tow; this brought the head of the veſſel about, but not before ſhe was within one hundred yards of the rock: a light breeze hardly diſcernible aided the boats. In this diſtreſs they ſought an opening to get within the rocks, and the ſhip was carried through one with the moſt amazing velocity: the crew were grateful to find themſelves once more in a ſtation, which they had lately been ſo anxious to leave. They called this opening Providential Channel, and the veſſel came to anchor when through it. The boats being ſent out to fiſh met with great ſucceſs, particularly in catching cockles, ſome of which were of ſuch an amazing ſize as to require the ſtrength of two men to move them. From the 18th to the 20th they ſailed by many iſlands and points of land, to which the Captain gave names. The 21ſt they paſſed a

channe

Digitized by Google

channel, and called a point York Cape. In the afternoon they anchored between ſome iſlands, and obſerved that the channel now began to grow wider: they obſerved two diſtant points, between which no land could be ſeen, ſo that every breaſt was animated with the hope of having diſcovered a paſſage into the Indian ſea: to be certain of this, the Captain with the gentlemen landed on an iſland, where they ſaw a number of Indians, ten of whom were on a hill; one carried a bow and a bundle of arrows, the reſt armed with lances; and round the necks of two of them, hung ſtrings of mother-of-pearl. The Captain, aſcending a hill, had a view of above forty miles, in which ſpace they ſaw nothing to contradict the idea of a paſſage, ſo that its certainty was almoſt aſcertained. Before he left the iſland, Captain Cook diſplayed the Engliſh colours, and took poſſeſſion of all the eaſtern coaſt of the country, from the 38th degree of ſouth latitude, to the preſent ſpot, by the name of *New South Wales*, for his ſovereign the King of Great Britain; and three vollies of ſmall arms being fired, and anſwered by the like number from the Endeavour, the place was called *Poſſeſſion Iſland.*

Towards the evening of the next day, they were advanced to the northern extremity of New Holland, and had the ſatisfaction of viewing the open ſea to the weſtward. The north-eaſt entrance of the paſſage is formed by the main land of New Holland, and by a number of iſlands, he called the *Prince of Wales's Iſlands:* theſe iſlands the Captain thinks may reach to New Guinea; they abound with trees and graſs, and were known to be inhabited from the ſmoke ſeen. To the paſſage they had ſailed through, the Captain gave the name of *Endeavour Streights.* The following is an account of the vaſt country they had juſt diſcovered.

New

Digitized by Google

New South Wales is a much larger country, than any hitherto known, which is not deemed a continent, being larger than all Europe. The Endeavour coaſted more than two thouſand miles, even if her track was reduced to a ſtrait line. North of the latitude of 33 degrees it is hilly, but not mountainous; to the ſouthward, it is generally low land. The hills are in general finely diverſified with lawns and woods, and many of the vallies are full of herbage; yet on the whole, it does not appear to be a fertile country. To the northward the graſs is not ſo rich, nor the trees ſo high, as in the ſouthern parts; and almoſt every where even the largeſt trees grow thirteen yards or more aſunder. Wherever the land forms a bay, the ſhore is covered with mangroves, which laſt a mile inland; they growing out of mud, that is covered at ſpring-tides. There are ſome bogs covered with thick graſs, and in the vallies is plenty of underwood: the ſoil in general ſeems unfit for cultivation, though there are many ſpots where the arts of tillage might be attended with ſucceſs.

There are many ſprings and brooks of freſh water, and ſalt-creeks, but no rivers of any conſiderable ſize; yet it is ſuppoſed to be upon the whole well watered, as the time when the ſhip was upon the coaſt was the drieſt ſeaſon of the year.

There are palms of three kinds, two of which are found only in the northern diſtrict. Among other plants, there is a kind of bull-ruſh, which yields a bright yellow reſin: this plant had a very agreeable ſmell, but it is not known to what uſes it might be applied. There are two kinds of yams, one round, and covered with ſtringy fibres, and the other ſhaped like a raddiſh: both are pleaſant eating. Beſides theſe, the country produces purſlane, and a kind of wild parſley.

Digitized by Google

Beſides the quadrupedes already mentioned, there is one, the belly of which is totally white, and the back brown, with white ſpots: it is much like a poll-cat, and the Indians call it *Quoll*. There are vaſt numbers of beautiful pigeons, many of which were ſhot by the ſeamen; the other land-birds are eagles, hawks, cranes, herons, buſtards, crows, quails, doves, parrots, parokets, cockatoos, and many others of elegant plumage.

Among the inſects, the muſcheto and the ant are the chief: the latter are very curious. One ſort are perfectly green, and live on trees, in which they build their neſts, by bending down the leaves, and glueing them together with an animal juice; thouſands of them joined to keep the leaf in its proper poſition, while many others were employed in glueing them. Being diſturbed in their work, the leaves, which are four or five inches in breadth, flew back with a force, which was thought much ſuperior to the united ſtrength of theſe inſects. Thoſe who diſturbed them were ſtung ſeverely. Another kind of ants are quite black, and live in the inſide of the branches of trees, after they have worked out the pith. Some of the branches being gathered, millions of theſe inſects iſſued from every broken twig.

Another ſort lives in the root of a plant that twines round the trunk of other trees. They hollow it for the purpoſe, and cut it into a number of paſſages, which croſs each other. A fourth ſort were like the white ants of the Eaſt-Indies, and had one ſort of neſt, as big as a half peck loaf, hanging from the boughs of the trees compoſed of vegetable matter, ſtuck together by an animal glue. The cells had a communication with each other, and had openings which led to other neſts on the ſame tree; they had likewiſe a hollow covered paſſage to another neſt on the ground, at the root of a different tree.

Digitized by Google

tree. The latter neſts are ſix feet high, and almoſt as much broad, the outſide plaiſtered with clay, near two inches thick; from them is a ſubterranean paſſage to the roots of the trees, near which they ſtand, from whence the ants aſcend, by covered ways, up the trunk and branches. As theſe ground-built houſes are proof againſt rain, it is ſuppoſed the ants make them their reſidence in the wet ſeaſon.

The ſeas produce variety and plenty of fiſh; among others, mullets, ſea cray-fiſh, and crabs. On the ſhoals are found the rock, pearl, and other oyſters, cockles of an enormous ſize, and moſt delicate green turtle.

The inhabitants are in no proportion to the extent of the country; more than thirty were never ſeen but once together. None of the villages conſiſted of more huts, than would ſhelter fourteen or ſifteen meen. No part of the country appeared to be cultivated. The men are of a middle ſize, well made, and exceedingly active; yet their voices are ſoft even to effeminacy. Their colour is chocolate: their hair long and black, but they cut it ſhort: they ſinge their beards to keep them ſhort.

Their huts were built of ſmall rods, the two ends fixed in the ground, ſo as to form the figure of an oven, covered with bark and palm-leaves. The height is only ſufficient for ſitting, and the door oppoſite to the fire-place. When they ſleep their heels are turned up to their heads, and even thus a hut will hold but four. The only furniture, was a ſort of bucket for fetching water, made of a piece of bark, tied up at each end.

Their method of producing fire, and extending the flames of it, was very ſingular. Having wrought one end of a ſtick into an obtuſe point, they place this point upon a piece of dry wood, and turning the upright ſtick very faſt backward and forward be-

Digitized by Google

tween their hands, the fire is ſoon produced; nor is it increaſed with leſs celerity: one of them was frequently obſerved to run along the ſea-coaſt, leaving fire at various places. The method taken to do this, was as follows: before he ſet off, he wrapped up a little ſpark of fire in dry graſs, and the quickneſs of his motion ſoon fanning it into a flame, he dropped it on the ground, and putting a ſpark of it in another bit of graſs ran on again, and encreaſed the number of his fires at pleaſure. Theſe fires were ſuppoſed to be intended for the taking of the kangaroo, as that animal was ſo very ſhy of fire, that when forced by the dogs, it would not paſs places that had been newly burnt, even when the fire was extinguiſhed.

Their lance is their chief weapon, to throw which, they uſe a ſtick three feet long, by means of which the lance flies with amazing rapidity, and is generally ſo well aimed, that a mark at the diſtance of fifty yards is more certainly ſtruck with it, than by a bullet from a gun.

The canoes in the northern parts, are formed by hollowing out the trunk of a tree with fire: they are in length about fourteen feet, and ſo narrow, that they would overſet, were they not provided with out-riggers. The natives row them with paddles, uſing both hands in that employment. In the ſouthern parts, they are formed only of a piece of bark four yards long, faſtened together at each end, and the middle kept open by pieces of wood, paſſing from ſide to ſide. Being very light, and drawing little water, the natives run them on mud-banks in ſearch of ſhell-fiſh: ſome fiſh it is probable they broil, and eat as ſoon as taken, as, in the center of theſe veſſels, there was uſually a fire burning on a quantity of ſea-weed.

They have no tools but a wooden mallet, a kind of wedge, and an adze of ſtone, with pieces

of

of coral and ſhells. They poliſh the points of their lances, with the leaves of a tree, which ſeems to be the wild fig, which rubs with a ſharpneſs almoſt equal to that of a raſp.

Auguſt 28th they ſteered due north in ſearch of New Guinea. The 29th they had ſight of a ſmall iſland, diſtant about three miles from the main land, which was before called Saint Bartholomew. They then held a northern courſe, barely within ſight of land, till the 3d of September; when the Captain determining to land, ſet out with the naturaliſts, &c. in the pinnace; but the water not being deep enough for her on the ſhore, they waded through the mud, and landed near a brook of water, near a fine grove of cocoa-nut trees, abounding with fruit. At a ſmall diſtance was an Indian hut, thatched with cocoa-leaves; and not far off grew the bread-fruit, and a number of plantains.

Being now a quarter of a mile from the pinnace, three of the natives ran out of the woods, ſhouting greatly. They ran towards the boat, the firſt of them throwing ſomething out of his hand, which burned like gunpowder, but making no noiſe, while the other two threw their lances. The crew fired; upon which the Indians ſtopped, and threw another lance: then the men fired with ball, upon which they ran off, probably wounded. The Captain then retreated to the boat, and rowed abreaſt of the natives to the number of eighty. Their ſtature was the ſame as that of the inhabitants of New South-Wales; but their colour was not quite ſo dark. They continued letting off their fires a few at a time in a kind of regular platoons: they were diſcharged by means of a bit of ſtick, almoſt like a hollow cane, which being ſwung ſideways, produced fire and ſmoke, exactly like that of ſmall-arms. The whole coaſt of this country is low land, but

Digitized by Google

cloathed with a richneſs of trees and herbage, which exceeds all deſcription.

The 3d of September 1770 they got under ſail: the 6th they ſaw land, which they conjectured was either Arron Iſlands, or Timor Laoet. Next morning they were convinced it was the latter: they ſtood off and on, and a number of fires were ſeen in the night. The land near the ſhore was covered with high trees, not unlike pines: farther back were cocoa-trees and mangroves: ſeveral ſpots of ground appeared to have been cleared by art, and the whole country roſe by gradual ſlopes into high hills.

They continued in ſight of the land for two days, when it was ſeen that the hills in ſome places reached quite to the ſea, and where they did not, were noble groves of the cocoa-nut tree, reaching a mile up the country, where were many houſes and plantations ſurrounded with fences, and extended nearly to the ſummits of the moſt lofty hills, yet neither people nor cattle were ſeen on any of them.

The 16th they ſaw the little iſland of Rotte, and ſoon after were clear of all the iſlands laid down in the maps. Next morning they were ſurprized with the ſight of one, upon which they ſaw houſes, groves of cocoa-nut trees, and large flocks of ſheep; welcome ſights to people ſick for want of ſuch refreſhments. The ſecond Lieutenant was diſpatched in ſearch of a landing-place, but came back without ſucceſs: he was diſpatched again with money, &c. to buy neceſſaries for the ſick. Doctor Solander went with him: they ſoon made a ſignal that the ſhip might anchor in a bay at ſome diſtance, to which ſhe bore away. On his return, the Lieutenant reported he could not buy any cocoa-nuts, the owner being from home; but he had brought ſome, which were preſents.

In the evening, the ſhip entered the bay which had been deſcribed, and an Indian town was ſeen at a ſmall

Digitized by Google

a ſmall diſtance: the Dutch colours were hoiſted: The Lieutenant was again diſpatched to acquaint the Governor, that the ſhip had put in for neceſſary refreſhments. He was conducted to the Raja, or King of the iſland, to whom, by a Portugueſe interpreter, he made known his buſineſs. The Raja ſaid he was ready to ſupply the ſhip with the neceſſary refreſhments, but that he could not trade with any other people than the Dutch; but would apply to *Lange* their agent for leave. Lange coming ſoon after to town gave the leave, and deſired to go on board the ſhip with the Raja, which was done, and they came on board juſt before dinner was ſerved. The Raja intimated, whether being a black, they would permit him to ſit down with them. He was ſoon convinced of the contrary, and good humour and feſtivity preſently prevailed. Mr. Banks gave him a dog, and the Captain a ſheep. They informed the Captain, that there was great plenty of fowls, hogs, ſheep, and buffaloes on the iſland, numbers of which, ſhould be conveyed to the ſea-ſhore on the following day, that he might purchaſe what was neceſſary.

When the next day came, no cattle appeared; and Lange made, for ſeveral days, the moſt futile and deſpicable excuſes; the whole purport of which was to draw preſents into his own pocket; nor was it till after he found that it was in vain, and his pretences ſeen through, that the Captain could open a trade with the natives: he purchaſed, at laſt, ſome hundred gallons of palm-ſyrup, ſome garlick, a large quantity of eggs, ſome limes and cocoa-nuts, thirty dozen of fowls, three hogs, ſix ſheep, and nine buffaloes.

This iſland is called Savu, is ſituated in 10 degrees 35 minutes ſouth latitude, and 237 degrees 30 minutes weſt longitude, and has hitherto been unknown. Its length is between twenty and thirty

Digitized by Google

miles, but its breadth could not be aſcertained. It was in the dry ſeaſon, not having rained for ſeven months, yet was the appearance of the iſland inchanting beyond deſcription. Near the coaſt the land is level, and well cloathed with palms and cocoa-trees; farther off the ground riſes in the moſt gradual aſcent, and is covered with fan-palm-trees. In the rainy ſeaſons they have abundance of indico, millet, maize, which grow beneath the nobleſt trees in the univerſe. It alſo produces tobacco, cotton, beetle, tamarinds, limes, oranges, mangoes, Guinea-corn, rice, callevances, and water-melons: a ſmall quantity of cinnamon was ſeen, and ſome European herbs. Some of their buffaloes are almoſt as large as an ox. The hogs are fed on rice-huſks and palm-ſyrup, and are remarkably fine and fat. The natives are of a dark brown colour.

The fan-palm is the moſt remarkable tree that grows on the iſland: they extract from it a liquor which reſembles wine, and excellent ſugar; alſo ſyrup of a much finer flavour than treacle, with which they fatten their hogs and dogs: of the leaves they make tobacco-pipes, umbrellas, cups, baskets, and the thatching of houſes. The fruit is of the ſize of a full-grown turnip.

From the ſcarcity of wood in the iſland they are obliged to contrive to make it go as far as poſſible. They dig a hollow underground two yards long, with a hole at each end, one of which is large, and the other ſmall; the fire is put in at the largeſt hole, while the ſmaller one ſerves for a draught: circular holes are made into the tunnel, on which are ſet earthen pots, which being large in the middle, and ſmall at the bottom, the fire acts upon a conſiderable part of them: they contain eight or nine gallons each, and they are kept conſtantly boiling with a very trifling quantity of fewel, ſuch as a palm-

Digitized by Google

palm-leaf, or a dry ſtalk. In this manner they boil all their victuals, as well as their ſugar and ſyrup.

It was from Mr. Lange, the Dutch Factor, that the hiſtory of the iſland was gained: he informed the Captain that it was able to raiſe ſeven thouſand three hundred fighting-men, armed with lances, ſpears, muſkets, targets and poleaxes. The natives are ſo expert at throwing their lances, as to pierce the heart of a man ſixty or ſeventy yards diſtance.

The inhabitants are divided into five claſſes, Rajas, land-owners, manufacturers, labourers, and ſlaves: the laſt are bought with the land; if ſeparate, a fat hogs is the price of one.

The Portugueſe eſtabliſhed themſelves here on their firſt coming into Indja. The Dutch poſſeſſed themſelves of it; but keep it only for raiſing proviſions for the ſpice-iſlands, in which, the ground being fully cultivated for ſpice, they breed no cattle.

Their religion is very ſingular: every man makes choice of his own god, and worſhips him according to his own fancy. Their morality is, however, of the pureſt kind; ſo that a robbery or murder is never perpetrated.

Timor is the principal iſland in the neighbourhood of Savu. The Dutch poſſeſs the greateſt part, having a fort and ſtore-houſes. Some part is in the hands of the Portugueſe. The three iſlands of Solars produce great plenty of the neceſſaries of life, carried in veſſels to the Dutch ſettlement at Timor. End is a Portugueſe iſland, where they have a town and a harbour. Rotte is a Dutch iſland with a reſident like Savu: it produces plenty of ſugar.

The Endeavour left Savu the 21ſt of September 1770, which day they diſcovered a little flat iſland in 10 degrees 47 minutes ſouth latitude, and 238 degrees 28 minutes weſt longitude, which has not been laid down in any of the charts hitherto pub-

Digitized by Google

liſhed. When the ſhip got clear of the ſeveral iſlands before mentioned, there was a continual ſwell of the ſea from the ſouth. which Captain Cook imputed to the poſition of the coaſt of New South Wales, imagining it to have determined the ſea in that direction. The 2d of October they were near Java. The land of that iſland had a delightful appearance, being every where well covered with trees. The 8th they came to anchor at Batavia. At this time they had only one man on board, beſides Tupia, that was ill: the Engliſh tars, whoſe want of foreſight and defiance of danger is notorious, ſeemed not to entertain the leaſt idea that even ſickneſs would attack a ſet of men ſo hardened as they were by different climates: but alas! they had very little idea of the fatal contagion which impregnates the air of Batavia.

The 10th the Captain and the gentlemen went on ſhore, and attended the Governor General, and Council, who received him politely, and granted all his requeſts.

Tupiad had been for ſome time on board dangerouſly ill, yet perſiſted to refuſe every medicine that was offered him. Mr. Banks having hired a houſe in the city, ſent for him: he was exceedingly low-ſpirited, but the moment he came into the town his whole frame appeared as if reanimated. The houſes, the carriages, the people, &c. were totally new to him, and aſtoniſhment took poſſeſſion of his features at ſights ſo wonderful. Tayota was alſo enraptured. The variety of dreſſes ſtruck him amazingly, he ſent on board the ſhip for his Otaheite dreſs: the inhabitants, who had ſeen Otourou brought thither by M. de Bougainville, ſuppoſed him to be the ſame.

The 18th the ſhip ſailed to Onruſt to be new fitted. Scarce a week had paſſed before the climate began to ſhew its effects. Dr. Solander and Mr.

Digitized by Google

Banks had fevers. Tupia and Tayota's lives were deſpaired of, and many of the men were ill. By the 26th, but few of the crew were well enough to do duty. The 5th of November the ſhip was laid down, and the ſame day Mr. Monkhouſe, the Surgeon, died: a loſs the more ſeverely felt, as he was very ſkillful in his profeſſion, and fell a ſacrifice to the peſtiferous air of the country when his abilities were moſt wanted. Death now advanced with haſty ſtrides among them. Tayota died the 9th, and was ſoon after followed by Tupia.

Dec. 8th the ſhip being repaired, anchored in the road of Batavia. The 24th the Captain took his leave of the Governor. Since their arrival in Batavia road, every perſon belonging to the ſhip had been ill, except the ſail-maker, who was more than ſeventy years old; yet this man got drunk every day that he remained there. Seven of her people were buried there, and at the time of ſailing forty of the crew were ſick, and the reſt ſo infeebled by their late illneſs as to be ſcarcely able to do their duty.

For the ſpace of more than thirty miles beyond the town, the land is totally flat. At forty miles it riſes into hills, and the air is purified in a great degree: to this diſtance the invalids are ſent by their phyſicians, when every other proſpect of their recovery has failed, and the experiment ſucceeds in almoſt every inſtance; for the ſick are ſoon reſtored to health, but they no ſooner return to the town than their former diſorders viſit them. On theſe hills the rich citizens have country ſeats, to which they go yearly. Thoſe who reſide conſtantly there enjoy an almoſt perpetual flow of health, and moſt of the vegetables of Europe grow as freely there as in their native ground: the ſtrawberry, in particular, flouriſhes greatly, which is a ſufficient proof of the coolneſs of the air.

The

Digitized by Google

The rice about Batavia is very plentiful, and in order to be brought to perfection, ſhould be kept flooded more than half its growth: they have alſo a ſort which grows on the ſides of hills, which is unknown in the Weſt India iſlands; this ſort is planted when the rains commence, and the crop is ripe ſoon after they are over.

Amazing quantities of ſugar are produced here, and while the quantity is beyond compariſon greater, the care of cultivation is inconceivably leſs than in the Weſt India iſlands. Pine-apples grow here in ſuch abundance, that they may be purchaſed at an Engliſh farthing. It is aſtoniſhing to conceive the quantity of fruit eaten here. They have two great fruit markets, where it is common to ſee fifty or ſixty cart-loads of pine-apples careleſsly tumbled together.

The neighbourhood of Batavia produces ſnipes of two kinds, one of which was the ſame as the Engliſh. Captain Cook obſerves, as a ſingularity reſpecting the ſnipe, that he is to be met with in all the quarters of the globe, and is ſeen in a greater variety of places than any other of the whole feathered creation.

Dec. 27th the Endeavour left Batavia, and ſtood over for the ſhore of Java. The 5th of January 1771, the Captain and the naturaliſts went aſhore on Prince's iſland for refreſhments for the ſick; and for wood and water, for this purpoſe they ſtaid ten days. During this time the crew felt the effects of the Batavia air; for in ſix weeks twenty-three perſons had died, excluſive of ſeven that had been buried at Batavia. March 15th, after a paſſage containing nothing remarkable, they arrived at the Cape of Good Hope; where the gentlemen had an opportunity of making ſome obſervations which deſerve to be recorded. The land over the Cape is mountainous and totally barren, beyond which the country

Digitized by Google

try is covered with a light ſand which will not admit of cultivation. Proviſions are brought to the Cape from the diſtance of nine hundred miles up the country; which is an evident proof of its extreme ſterility, notwithſtanding what has hitherto been written to the contrary. While they were here a farmer came to the Cape, bringing his young children with him from a diſtance that took him fifteen days journey; and on his being aſked why he had not left his children with ſome neighbour, he ſaid, there was no inhabitant within five days journey of his farm. There are no trees that are even two yards in height, except in ſome plantations near the Cape Town.

The air of the Cape is ſo pure and ſalubrious, that a ſick perſon who goes thither from Europe, whatever be his diſorder, almoſt always recovers his health in a little time: but thoſe who bring diſeaſes with them from the Eaſt Indies have not an equal chance of recovery.

Although this country is naturally ſo barren as ſcarely to produce any thing, yet the unceaſing induſtry of its inhabitants has ſo effectually combated the ſparing hand of nature, that there are few places where the neceſſaries of life are more plentiful, nor are luxries ſcarce.

Apr. 14th, 1771, they weighed anchor, and on May-day arrived at St. Helena, which riſes out of the ocean eighteen hundred miles from the coaſt of America, and twelve hundred from that of Africa. It has the appearance of a huge mountain, the foundation of which is probably at the center of the globe. It had formerly volcanoes in ſeveral parts of it. It is ſo happily ſituated, with regard to climate, that it would, if properly cultivated, produce the trees, fruits, plants, and flowers, of all the different parts of the world. On the ſummit of the higheſt ridges the cabbage-tree flouriſhes; in the

Digitized by Google

the parts below theſe grow the gum-wood and red-wood; and in the vallies many of the plants of the Indies, and almoſt all thoſe of Europe; yet theſe ſeveral productions will not grow but on the ſpots of ground peculiarly adapted to each.

May 4th, they left Saint Helena, and the 12th of June came to an anchor in the Downs.

OBSERVATIONS.

[*No doubts can be entertained that this voyage is for diſcoveries, the moſt ſatisfactory that ever was undertaken. Indeed the new and totally unknown countries brought to light in it, much exceed the diſcoveries made in two hundred preceding years. And ſo many men of ingenuity and ſcience going in the Endeavour, hath made the relation of her voyage far more ſatisfactory than of any other upon record.*

We learn from it that the exiſtence of a great ſouthern continent is extremely improbable, and certainly does not exiſt in thoſe latitudes where a variety of geographers have laid it down. This negative information is a matter of very great importance in a voyage undertaken merely for the promotion of ſcience.

Among the new countries now diſcovered, the immenſe line of coaſt of New South Wales laid down in a track, which heretofore was marked as ſea, claims the pre-eminence by this diſcovery. A territory of the extent of two thouſand miles is added to the crown of Great Britain. In point of fertility, products, &c. our voyagers had not an opportunity of gaining information beyond what they ſaw, which was not upon the whole promiſing, except the ſouthern part, where the climate is fine, and the ſoil capable of yielding any thing.

In New Zealand they made the diſcovery of two vaſt iſlands, great part of which are ſituated in the happieſt climate, abounding with valuable products, and

as

Digitized by Google

as fertile a ſoil as any in the world. The fineſt timbers on the globe are there found in the utmoſt profuſion. But what would alone make the ſettlement of a colony here an object of great wiſdom, is, the ſpecies of flax found there are great plenty, till then quite unknown to the botaniſts, in ſtrength, fineneſs, and duration ſo much exceeding our hemp, that no products in the world would be equal to it for this nation: plantations of it would be more valuable than of nutmegs.

Conſidering the importance of this article, the voſt plenty of excellent timber, the fertility of the ſoil, the noble harbours every where abounding on the coaſt; the good ſenſe and docility of the inhabitants, with the plenty of all neceſſaries ſo eaſily to be had; there is not, perhaps, any country in which it would be ſo adviſeable to colonize. Nor can we ſee the propriety of not attending to the commercial intereſts of the kingdom, though the origin of the plan was the advancement of ſcience only; and when it is conſidered that the emigrations from a country will always go on whether old colonies are profitable or not, it will appear to be good national œconomy to direct thoſe emigrations, where they may prove more advantageous than the colonies of America at preſent promiſe to do.

The diſcovery of the Streights between New South Wales and New Guinea is another point of great conſequence unknown before, but aſcertained by this voyage. As to Otaheite and the neighbouring iſles, they are pictured here in colours which muſt ever render them enticing to Europeans. The hiſtory of them is one of the greateſt curioſities that has been laid before the public for ſome ages, and will render this voyage an entertaining, as it certainly is an important work.

Another circumſtance we ſhall not paſs over, is the mortality which ſeems annexed to Batavia. It is amazing that Captain Cook ſhould have determined to refit his ſhip at the very peſt of the globe, ſo many other places in China and the Indies, and yet to abide at that ſink for

Digitized by Google

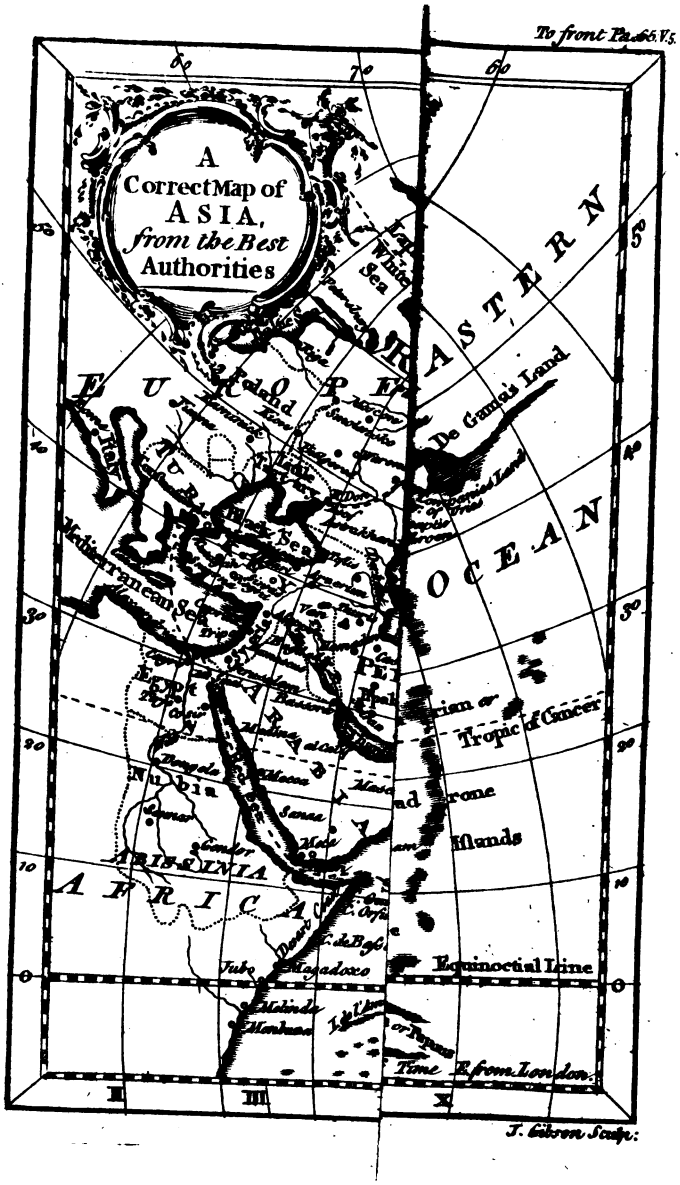
for the deſtruction of his crew! This appears to be a great error, indeed the only error in his conduct. Why Tupia, Tayota, and the others, were not ſent to the hills forty miles from Batavia, is alſo an inquiry which every man, who reads the voyage will naturally make.

We are let into a much better idea of the Dutch ſettlement at the Cape of Good Hope than is to be gained from any other work. Till now it has been repreſented as a uniform paradiſe, and the company's gardens as aſtoniſhing exertions: by this journal we find the one an almoſt uniform field of ſterility, the other a row of trees and a cabbage-ground. Such are the advantages of having deſcriptions from men of fortune and the world, as well as from accurate botaniſts; inſtead of reading the account of ſailors, factors, ſoldiers, Eaſt Indian thieves, men who know not what a country is, from having ſpent their lives in cities, or on ſhip-board.

TRAVELS.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

A

VOYAGE

FROM ENGLAND TO INDIA,

In the YEAR 1754;

ALSO,

A JOURNEY FROM PERSIA TO ENGLAND,

BY EDWARD IVES, ESQ.

Surgeon of ADMIRAL WATSON's Ship.

AS ſoon as our ſea and land forces, under Admiral Boſcawen, after the peace of Aix la Chapelle, had left India, Monſieur Dupleix began to intrigue among the Indian princes, which was followed by his aſſiſting the Nabobs in the French intereſt with forces, by which means they gained various advantages over the allies of the Engliſh company. Muſtapha Jing, a powerful prince, and Chunda Saeb, an enterprizing general, were the men with whom he was particularly connected. The Engliſh preſidency ſaw the tendency of his views ſo clearly, that they determined to oppoſe force by force, by joining their troops to thoſe of Nazir Jing, and the Nabob of Arcot, Mahomed Aly.

Upon this footing, a bloody war opened between the two companies, in which ſeveral actions happened,

Digitized by Google

ed, under the command of Major Lawrence and Mr. Clive, that gave great glory to our arms; yet did the French deſigns advance with ſuch rapidity, that the company was alarmed. They petitioned government for their relief; and a ſmall ſquadron, under Admiral Watſon, and a regiment of infantry, under Colonel Adlercron, were ſent.

Feb. 22d. 1754, the Kent (of which I was ſurgeon) ſailed from Spithead for Plymouth, and on the 9th of March the Admiral put to ſea with the following ſhips for the Eaſt-Indies: Kent, the Admiral, ſeventy guns; Eagle, ſixty; Saliſbury, fifty; Briſtol, fifty; Bridgwater, twenty; King's-fiſher ſloop, ſixteen.

The 12th, the Admiral put into Kingſale road, and ſent an expreſs to Colonel Adlercron, requeſting him to march his regiment from Cork to that port. By a gale of wind here the Eagle and Briſtol were ſo diſabled, that the Admiral proceeded without them. The 24th, having the proportion of the troops on board, we ſet ſail; April the 6th we anchored at Madeira. That iſland is ſituated in a fine climate in latitude thirty-two degrees, twenty-ſeven minutes. The face of the country is very mountainous, interſperſed with vineyards, which form a moſt romantic and delightful proſpect. April 19th, we left this place. In our following paſſage, a ſhark was caught with ſeventy-two young ones in her belly, each from ſix to fourteen inches long. Another was afterwards caught by the Saliſbury's crew, which had the horns, ſkin, and many bones of a bullock in the belly. After it was dead and dried, a large man paſſed through its jaws.

The 17th of July, we diſcovered the long-wiſhed-for iſland of Madagaſcar, and the next day anchored in St. Auguſtine's bay, at the ſouthern part of the iſland, latitude twenty-three degrees, forty-two minutes ſouth. The next day we received on board freſh beef

Digitized by Google

beef for the uſe of the ſhip's companies. The next day the Admiral appointed me Superintendant of the ſick and wounded of the whole ſquadron. Madagaſcar lies between twelve and twenty-ſix degrees ſouth latitude; it is of a great extent, very fertile, and abounds in moſt of the neceſſaries of life. Four or five Kings poſſeſs it, who make frequent war on each other, and carry off families and cattle, ſelling the firſt for ſlaves.

The bullocks here are very large and fat, weighing commonly from ſix to ſeven hundred pounds each, and are ſo highly valued by Europeans, that many ſhips come hither from India to kill and ſalt them. They have a great hump of fat between the two ſhoulders, that weighs twenty pounds. The ſheep of Madagaſcar differ very little from the goats, being alike hairy.

We had no ſooner come to anchor here, than ſome of the principal men in the King of Baba's court came on board the Kent. They have Engliſh names, as Robin Hood, Philibey, the General, John Anderſon, and Frederic Martin. In the king's own family is a Prince of Wales, a Duke of Cumberland, &c. The inhabitants are negroes, but not with ſuch woolly hair as thoſe of Guinea.

Moſt of the natives near this bay ſpeak as much broken Engliſh as enables them to exchange their cattle, poultry, milk, fruit, rice, ſalt, purſlane, potatoes, yams, fiſh, lances, and ſhells, for our muſquets, powder, bullets, flints, linnens, beads, iron-pots, &c.

Soon after our arrival, the King of Baba came down with his family into the neighbourhood, and ſent to the Admiral to know when he would viſit him. On the day appointed, the Admiral, attended with all his captains and officers, went to his tents. The King was ſitting on a graſs mat, with a wrapper round his middle, and on his head he wore a Dutch grenadier's

Digitized by Google

grenadier's cap, a foot and a half high, faced with the arms of their company. He took the Admiral by the hand, and enquired how King George did. He enquired what preſents he had for him. Theſe, conſiſting of fire arms, ſwords, and ſpirituous liquors, were immediately given: the brandy pleaſed him beſt, but found fault with there not being enough. Three or four dozen of white wine were brought in for the ladies; but they cried it was inſipid, and ſtuck to the brandy.

The country, beſides large timber-trees of different kinds, abounds with variety of ſhrubs and ſucculent plants. The ſugar-canes are as thick as a ſtout man's wriſt, and ſo full of juice, that a foot of them in length will weigh two pounds, being much larger and finer than any in the Weſt-Indies. The rivers, beſides their abounding with great quantities of excellent fiſh, are full of alligators of an enormous ſize. The iſland produces great plenty of Guinea-hens.

It may be of uſe to future navigators to know that no good water is to be had at St. Auguſtine, unleſs they ſend their boat four or five miles up the river. I cannot finiſh without remarking that ſuch quantities of limes and oranges grow here, that the largeſt veſſels may be eaſily filled with their juice, which is to be purchaſed at a very ſmall expence, with iron pots, muſquets, powder, ball, flints, &c. A ſmall quantity, mixed daily with the ſeamens' common drink, would, in a great meaſure, prevent their falling into the ſcurvy. During our ſtay, I procured about half a hogſhead full, the benefit of which was greatly felt by the Kent's crew, not only here, but after I got to the Ganges.

The 7th of Auguſt, having completed our water and ſtores, we left Madagaſcar. September the 5th, we ſaw Friar's Hood in Ceylon, and the 10th anchored in Fort St. David's road. On the appearance of our force, Monſieur Godcheu, who had juſt ſuperceded

Digitized by Google

perceded Monſieur Dupleix, had agreed with Mr. Saunders, Governor of Fort St. George, that a ſuſpenſion of arms ſhould take place from the 11th of October to the 11th of January; ſo that, to our great ſurpriſe, inſtead of being employed in military operations, we had nothing to do but to amuſe ourſelves. Fort St. David is a ſmall but ſtrong and regular fortification, built on a riſing ground. The company's territory, of about four miles, is very pleaſant, and the air fine, having ſeldom any fogs. There are many neat houſes with gardens, in which they have pine-apples, oranges, limes, pomegranates, plantains, bananas, mangoes, guavas, &c. and many ſorts of European garden-plants.

The men of this country are tall and well made, yet ſo timorous, that they are ill calculated for war. The beſt troops are the Rajpout ſoldiers, who are inured to all the hardſhips of the field: yet even theſe will not make any ſtand when oppoſed by the regular forces brought from Europe.

The Admiral and many others of the ſquadron were preſent at a widow ſacrificing herſelf to the manes of her dead huſband. Mr. Watſon diſcovering, as he thought, ſome ſigns of reluctance in the woman, ordered his interpreter to aſk her whether the action was voluntary? aſſuring her that if ſhe was forced to it, he would ſave her, ſecure her from the reſentment of her relations, and ſettle an ample proviſion on her for life. Though ſenſible of theſe offers, ſhe replied that ſhe was about to die both voluntarily and cheerfully. She ſoon after placed herſelf at full length on a platform, folded her arms round the corpſe, and ſo continued with the greateſt tranquility, till both their bodies were covered with the fire-wood heaped upon them: it was then ſet on fire, and loud ſhouts raiſed to drown the ſhrieks of the woman. The whole company left the place much dejected. The ſuperſtitious penances of other ſorts are ſtrangely

Digitized by Google

whimſical. One claſs never eaſe themſelves till the ſun is down, and by way of prevention, keep a plug of dried mud in their fundament. And in Bengal, on every 9th of April, they have a penance, which conſiſts of being hoiſted up by pullies, and hanging by hooks, drawn through the fleſh of the ſhoulders or breaſts, ſwinging with great velocity, and playing all the while a thouſand antic tricks. Another mode is to be hung up by ropes tied about their ancles and knees, and kept ſwinging over a fire, and making it up themſelves, having dry wood placed within reach.

Oct. 11th, the day of the ſuſpenſion of arms taking place, we left Fort St. David, and the 13th of November anchored in Bombay road. Bombay is a ſmall iſland, but for its ſize, perhaps, the moſt flouriſhing of any in the univerſe. Though the ſoil is barren, yet the convenience of its ſituation will always more than make up for that defect. It is the grand ſtorehouſe of all the Arabian and Perſian commerce. It is the moſt convenient place among all our ſettlements in the Indies for careening or heaving down large ſhips; and for ſmall ones they have a very good dock, and there were ſtill improvements making. They have alſo a good rope-yard; ſo that this is the only place in that part of the world for ſhattered ſhips to refit at. There is plenty of naval ſtores, and the harbour is a very good one. The Admiral, while he was here, had oxen for his chaiſe, which trotted and gallopped without difficulty.

While I was here, I often ſaw the Anchorets, called Joogees, ſitting under the ſhade of cocoa-trees. I once aſked one of them in his prayers to remember an increaſe of my happineſs. To which, with great complacency, he replied; "I hardly "know what to aſk for you. I have ſeen you often, and you have always appeared to me to enjoy perfect health; you ride in your chaiſe at your

Digitized by Google

" your eaſe, are often accompanied with a pretty " lady: you are ever well cloathed, and are like- " wiſe fat, ſo that you ſeem to be in poſſeſſion of " every thing that can be any way neceſſary to hap- " pineſs. I believe, therefore, when I pray for " you, it muſt be in this ſtrain, " *That God would* " *give you grace to deſerve and be thankful for thoſe* " *many bleſſings which he has already beſtowed upon* " *you.*"

Among the natural productions the frogs are curious, ſome of them being twenty-two inches long and weighing four or five pounds. The Covra Capella ſnake I have ſeen from four to nine feet long: they kill whomſoever they bite in fifteen minutes. The Covra Manilla is a ſmall bluiſh ſnake, the ſize of a man's little finger, and about a foot long: a ſpecies of theſe at Bombay kill with their bite much ſooner than the Covra Capella.

Dec. 15th, we took our leave of the Governor Bourchier, and the gentlemen of the council, and the 16th weighed anchor. On the 13th of Jan. 1755, we arrived again in fort Saint David's road, and the 18th in that of Madraſs, where, to our great ſatisfaction, we found riding at anchor his Majeſty's ſhip the Cumberland, Commodore Pocock, and in eight days were joined by the Tyger, Captain Latham. Here we learned that Mr. Saunders had concluded a conditional treaty with Monſieur Godeheu, to continue in force till ratified by the two companies, by which means hoſtilities were cut off for eighteen months at leaſt.

Madraſs, or fort Saint George, is our company's chief ſettlement on the Coromandel coaſt, and ſituated between 13 and 14 degrees north latitude. It is ſituated in a ſandy, barren ſoil: and the climate is ſo intenſely hot, that were it not for the ſea-breezes, which agreeably cool the air, it would be altogether uninhabitable.

The

Digitized by Google

The poor people live in the ſuburbs in miſerable huts, covered with Cajan leaves, and ſo low, that a man cannot ſtand upright in them; but though both houſe and garden do not take up a quarter of an acre, you rarely meet with leſs than ten or twelve perſons in each, beſides an hog and a buffalo; ſo very numerous are the inhabitants of this country. The Indians in general are very temperate, a ſtrong evidence of which, is their hands, which, if touched by chance, you will be ſure to find very cold, even in the middle of the hotteſt day; while the hands of the Europeans are burning with an exceſſive heat, partly the effect perhaps of our intemperate way of living.

Among the lower tribes, the women do all the drudgery: they get all the fodder for the gentlemens' horſes in the fort, and are obliged to bring it ſome miles. They likewiſe grind all the rice uſed in their own houſes; fetch wood and cow-dung to burn; and as the water near the fort is brackiſh, they are neceſſitated to go every day a mile or two to a good well, and bring a large pitcher of it upon their heads for the uſe of the gentlemen of the factory.

The mechanics of this country are of exceeding dull invention, and ſubmit moſt implicitly to the modes, tools, and every method of their forefathers, ſo that improvements are abſolutely cut off; but they are good copiers in their own way, and will give you their imitation with every excellence and defect of the original.

April 7th 1755 we ſailed from Madraſs in company with the Cumberland, Tyger, Saliſbury, and Bridgewater, for Trinconomale in the iſland of Ceylon; and on the twenty-ſecond of that month, came to an anchor in the harbour. In the afternoon, the Dutch Governor came on board to congratulate the Admiral, and to offer him every aſſiſtance. The next day the viſit was returned.

This

Digitized by Google

This harbour is a very good one for ſhips to put into in diſtreſs, and better calculated for wooding and watering a ſquadron, than any other in the Indies. It reſembles that of Portſmouth, and is almoſt quite land-locked. The trade here is very inconſiderable; the reaſon of the Dutch fortifying it, is to prevent others from getting any footing in the iſland.

The iſland is very large, being two hundred and fifty miles long, and two hundred broad. The inner part is in poſſeſſion of the natives, who are Gentoos.

Among the vegetable productions here are the euphorbium, tulip-tree, ebony, red-wood, caſſia, cocoa-nut, cotton, lime, mango, citron; but the peculiar tree is the cinnamon, which grows wild in every wood on the ſouth-weſt part near Columbo. This tree is propagated by a bird's eating of the fruit, part of which he diſcharges again, and afterwards the ſeeds take root: it grows ſomewhat like our common hazel, and the leaves are like the laurel. Coffee alſo grows here wild, as do the trees which produce balſam of capivi, gambogium, lacca, and cinquenomale.

Every morning and evening we were gratified with a fine odour from the trees and flowering ſhrubs that were in bloom. The ſoil between the hills is a fat red earth, and the vallies are extremely pleaſant. They have iron, black-lead, and copper, and Mr. Thomas, a Corniſh gentleman, aſſured us, he had picked up tin in it: various precious ſtones are alſo found here.

Wild and tame fowl are very cheap. A dozen of fowls or five ducks are bought for half-a-crown Engliſh. The bay abounds in fiſh, which are bought very cheap. The fruits are the ſame; ſuch as pine-apples, jacks, bananas, cocoa-nuts, mangoes, &c. a pine-apple may be bought for a penny. They have common deer in great abundance; and alſo

Digitized by Google

Guinea deer; but horned cattle are few. Elephants are here large and numerous. Since the invention of fire-arms they have been found of leſs conſequence than before. They are chiefly uſed at preſent for the fording deep rivers. In time of action they now and then fix a heavy chain to the end of their trunks, which they whirl about ſo as to make it impoſſible for an enemy to come near them at that time. Another uſe they ſtill have for theſe creatures in war, is, to burſt open the gates of cities which are beſieged. This he does by ſetting his rump againſt them, with his whole weight, till he has burſt the bars, and forced an entrance; to prevent which moſt of the garriſons in this country have large ſpikes ſtuck in their gates. Keeping them is attended with a very great expence; for they devour vaſt quantities of food, and you muſt ſometimes treat them plentifully with cinnamon, of which they are extremely fond. They live, it is thought, from two to three hundred years; and it is certain that they are in full vigour at much above a hundred. They have tygers here, and many ſorts of venomous inſects. I ſaw a ſpider as large as a toad, with brown hairs upon it; the legs were of the thickneſs of a tobacco-pipe, and four inches long.

May 10th, we left Trinconomale: the 14th caſt anchor in Fort Saint David's Road, where we ſtaid till Auguſt. The 19th of that month we left it, and the ſame evening caſt anchor in Madraſs road; there we lay till the 10th of October, when we ſailed to Bombay to avoid the monſoon, and to refit the ſhips. We arrived there the 11th of November, and found there Lieutenant Colonel Robert Clive, who had lately landed on the iſland with three companies of the King's artillery from England.

That commander came with deſign of acting in conjunction with the Maharattas againſt the French in the Carnatic and Decan; but finding their hands

tied

Digitized by Google

tied by the truce, it was agreed in a council held, that the forces by ſea and land ſhould be employed in the deſtruction of Angria's piratical ſtate, which had of late become very troubleſome to the whole Malabar coaſt. While the ſhips were careening, the Admiral diſpatched Commodore James to look into Geriah, and reconnoitre the harbour and fortifications. By that gentleman's report, it appeared, that on the 14th of December he arrived off the place, where he ſaw Angria's fleet of three three-maſt grabs, eight ketches, and twelve or fourteen gallivats in the harbour, rigged, and with their ſails bent. That the fort was neither high nor ſtrong, though a large maſs of buildings; that a landing might be made good, eaſily; and that the place might be both battered and bombarded from the ſhips.

This intelligence being received, and the ſquadron refitted, a council was held by Mr. Watſon's deſire of the land and ſea officers of his Majeſty's and the Companies forces, to lay down rules for the diſtribution of prize-money; in which there paſſed ſeveral mutual inſtances of generoſity and diſintereſtedneſs between the Admiral and Colonel Clive.

The forces, conſiſting of ſeven hundred Europeans, three hundred Topaſſes, and three hundred ſepoys, being embarked, the fleet ſailed from Bombay, February 7th 1756, and arrived in Geriah Road on the 11th following. The Admiral immediately ſummoned the fort to ſurrender; but the anſwer was, that they were reſolved to defend themſelves to the laſt extremity.

Between one and two o'clock in the afternoon, the ſquadron ſtood in with a light breeze in two columns, ſo diſpoſed, that each line-of-battle-ſhip covered a bomb-ketch, and protected the column of ſmaller veſſels from the fire of the enemy. About two, the fort fired on the Kingsfiſher that led the ſquadron. Soon after the Admiral threw out the

Digitized by Google

general ſignal to engage. After an inceſſant fire kept up for half an hour, perceiving that the ſhot from the Revenge and Guardian fell ſhort, he ſent orders to them to ceaſe, directing, at the ſame time, the Tyger and the Saliſbury to fire againſt the north-eaſt baſtion. Soon after a fortunate ſhell ſet fire to the Reſtoration grab, which Angria had taken from the company, and ſhe, driving among the reſt of their ſhipping, ſet them all on fire, the flames reaching others that were building; and from them the arſenal, ſtore-houſe, ſuburbs, and city; and continued burning all night with ſuch violence, that the walls appeared like red-hot iron.

At half-after four in the afternoon, finding the fort-guns almoſt ſilenced, the Admiral made a ſignal for his ſhips alſo to ſtop their fire: but the fort, after this, firing briſkly again, the ſhips did the ſame, till the enemies fire was entirely ſilenced, which was at half paſt ſix. In an hour after, Colonel Clive with his troops left the ſhips, and a quarter after nine made two falſe fires as ſignals that he was ſafely landed. The ketches continued the bombardment till day-light, when the ſhips warped in as cloſe as poſſible, in order to batter in breach. The Admiral then ſent a ſecond ſummons to the fort to ſurrender; but that being refuſed, the battering ſucceeded with ſo much ſpirit, that about two o'clock a magazine in the fort blew up, and at four the fort hung out a flag of ſubmiſſion: but explanations not ſatisfactory ariſing, hoſtilities were renewed till a quarter after five, when another flag was hung out. Colonel Clive, who had been making his approaches by land, came on board the Admiral's ſhip, bringing with him an officer from the fort with articles of capitulation. Theſe were preſently agreed to, and an Engliſh officer took poſſeſſion of the fort; and the 14th the Colonel and the whole army marched in. This important place fell thus into our hands

Digitized by Google

hands with the loſs only of twenty men. There were two hundred and fifty pieces of cannon, ſix mortars, and an immenſe quantity of ſtores and ammunition. One hundred thouſand pounds ſterling in rupees, and thirty thouſand pounds in effects. By this conqueſt, Angria's whole country, extending four degrees of latitude along the coaſt, was taken from him, and himſelf entirely ruined; he however eſcaped himſelf, having quitted the fort a few days before the attack; leaving the government in the hands of one of his wives brothers, with the care alſo of both his wives, and his two children.

The Admiral viſited theſe unfortunate captives. Upon his entrance they all made a reverential bow, to the very ground, ſhedding many tears. The Admiral bad them be comforted, promiſing them that they ſhould ſuffer no injury under his protection. Angria's mother, ſtrongly affected, cried out, that the people had no King, ſhe no ſon, her daughter no huſband, the children no father. Mr. Watſon replied, he would be their father and their friend. Upon which the youngeſt child of ſix years old, taking the Admiral's hand, "Then you "ſhall be my father," and called him "Father." The Admiral, overpowered by the ſenſations of the moment, turned aſide to hide the tears ready to guſh from his eyes. It was Mr. Watſon's intention to ſettle them at Bombay, but they afterwards aſked the favour of being left at Geriah, probably by Angria's directions.

The 19th of February 1756, the Tyger was ſent to Bombay with the ſick and wounded of the ſquadron, and the 17th of March the Admiral came to an anchor there. The 27th of April he once more ſailed with his ſquadron for the Coromandel Coaſt: we touched at Geriah in the way, and on the 14th of May, anchored at Fort Saint David's. Here Mr. Watſon received letters from the Secretary

Digitized by Google

of State and the Admiralty, allowing him to quit the Eaſt-Indies, reſigning the command on ſuch an event to rear-Admiral Pococke. The climate had diſagreed with him ſo much, that he pleaſed himſelf with the idea of ſailing back to Europe in October.

This proſpect however was clouded by freſh intelligence from the Eaſt-India Company, that three thouſand regular French troops had embarked from France in ſix ſail of the line, and ſix India ſhips. Upon this the Admirals and all the officers left their houſes, and repaired on board the ſhips, where they lived ſix weeks, keeping a good look-out from the maſt-head. The government of Madraſs requeſted the Admiral to take the King's regiment, then at Fort Saint David's, on board, and ſail with it to Madraſs. The Admiral complied, though reluctantly, knowing that Saint David's Road was the right ſtation to intercept the enemy. On our arrival at Madraſs, we had the ſatisfaction to find the active and ſpirited Governor Pigot, at the head of many labourers and artificers, making great additions to the fortifications, and expoſing his own perſon in the hotteſt days of the moſt ſultry ſeaſon.

Juſt before this, the Nabob of Golconda quarrelled with the French General M. Buſſy, who had long preyed on the vitals of his country. The Nabob applied to our preſidency, but happening juſt when they expected themſelves to be attacked, they could not comply with his deſire. But two ſhips arriving from England, without a ſyllable of the French armament, it was concluded that the whole had never any foundation; upon which a body of troops, with a train of artillery, was ordered to be ready to march to Golconda, the opulent country where Monſieur Dupleix and countrymen had amaſſed amazing ſums.

Before theſe troops however could march, the diſagreeable news was brought, that the Nabob Serajah

Digitized by Google

tajah al Dowla had taken our fort at Caſſimbuzar, near Muxadabad, and was expected ſoon to appear before Fort William at Calcutta. Before we had paſſed the tranſports of our chagrin, another expreſs arrived, which informed us, that he had taken Calcutta, and played the Barbarian at the tragedy of the Black Hole: a dreadful blow! which ſhook the Company to its foundation, very much owing, as well as the loſs of an opportunity of reducing the French power in Golconda, to the haſty and ill-founded intelligence ſent by the directors of the imaginary French ſquadron.

The Admiral, Colonel Clive, and the Company's principals, directly concerted a plan of operations for reſtoring the Company's affairs in Bengal; and preparations were ſcarcely begun, before orders came to the Admiral to return to England with the ſquadron. Mr. Watſon immediately conſulted Admiral Pococke, Captain Speke, and his Secretary Mr. Doidge, what was to be done; and as it was plain that the miniſtry in England could not know of the event which had lately happened in Bengal, they agreed that the Admiral ſhould poſtpone his departure. The Governor and Council meeting, were quite confounded when they heard the orders, declaring the Company muſt be utterly undone, if the ſquadron did not proceed immediately to Bengal. It was reſolved that the fleet ſhould proceed to the mouth of the Ganges, and anchor in Ballaſore Road, in order for the Company's ſhips to take the troops on board. Accordingly on the 16th of October, they ſailed from Madraſs. Upon arriving in the Ganges, the accounts of the deplorable ſtate of the remains of our people, who were at Fulta, a deſpicable village on the river, induced the Admiral to attempt paſſing the bar; in which we ſucceeded, and arrived there the 14th, and were received as guardian angels by our diſtreſſed countrymen. The 27th the

Digitized by Google

Admiral ſailed from thence with the Kent, Tyger, Saliſbury, Bridgwater, Kingsfiſher, and Walpole Indiaman, having firſt embarked the troops which had been landed to refreſh, and which amounted to ſix hundred Europeans, and one thouſand ſepoys. The 29th they were landed under the command of Lieutenant Colonel Clive at Mayapou, and immediately attacked Bougee Fort; the cannon of which being ſilenced by the ſhips, a detachment of ſeamen landed to aſſiſt the Colonel in ſtorming. That officer had ordered a pauſe of reſt, from the great fatigues the troops had undergone; all was quiet in the camp, and the ſhips were likewiſe ſilent, when, ſuddenly, a loud and univerſal acclamation was heard from the ſhore, and an account ſoon afterwards brought that the fort was taken by ſtorm; but in ſo ſingular a manner, that it deſerves attention. During the tranquil ſtate of the camp, one Strahan, a common ſailor belonging to the Kent, having juſt received a quantity of grog, had too high ſpirits to think of ſleep: he ſtrayed by himſelf towards the fort, till he found himſelf under the walls. Meeting no interruption, he took it into his head to mount a breach, and getting upon a baſtion, he there diſcovered ſeveral Moor-men ſitting on the platform, at whom he flouriſhed his cutlaſs and fired a piſtol, and then giving three loud huzzas, cried out, "The place is mine!" The Moors attacked him, but he defended himſelf incomparably. Some other ſailors hearing him, ſcaled the breach likewiſe, and, ſhouting triumphantly, ſoon rouſed the army, who, falling on without diſcipline, followed the ſailors, and the fort was taken.

Strahan, the hero of the action, was ſoon brought before the Admiral, who felt the neceſſity of reproving ſuch notorious want of diſcipline. "Mr. "Strahan," ſaid he, "what is this that you have "been doing?" The fellow, ſcratching his head,

re-

replied, "Why to be ſure, Sir, it was I who took "the fort, but I hope there was no harm in it." Mr. Watſon was ready to ſmile at the fellow's ſimplicity. Strahan, finding that he was to be puniſhed, muttered, as he went from the cabbin, "If I am "flogged for this here action, I will never take "another fort by myſelf as long as I live, by "God." The Admiral eaſily pardoned him; and deſigned to promote him, but was prevented by the extreme irregularity of his conduct.

Dec. 30th the troops were again ſent on board the ſquadron to proceed up the river. January 2d 1757, all the ſquadron weighed and proceeded on to Calcutta, which was yielded up almoſt without a conteſt, and Captain Coote appointed Governor by the Admiral. This authority Colonel Clive denied, and took poſſeſſion of the fort. The Admiral ſent Captain Speke to the Colonel to know his authority; he anſwered, his commiſſion. Mr. Watſon ſent, that if he did not quit the fort, he would fire him out. The Colonel was firm: they ſent Captain Latham. The Colonel returned, that if the Admiral would come on ſhore, and command in perſon, he ſhould have no objection to it. This was done the next day, and the Colonel gave up the keys, which were delivered to the late Governor, Mr. Drake, and his council; upon which war was declared againſt the Naboh.

This ſtep being taken, it was thought proper to puſh the war with vigour: for this purpoſe they caſt their eyes on Houghley, a very large rich city on the Ganges, about thirty miles above Calcutta. The Bridgwater, Kingsfiſher ſloop, and Thunder bomb-ketch, with all the boats of the ſquadron, manned with one hundred and fifty ſailors, two hundred troops, and two hundred and fifty ſepoys, were ordered on that duty. Major Kirkpatrick was appointed by Mr. Clive to command by land, and

Digitized by Google

Captain King was at the head of the ſailors. They ſailed the 5th of January. The 10th the ſhips cannonaded the fort, and having made a breach, it was attacked and taken. After this capture, Captain Speke, of the Kent, was ſent to command the ſailors, and to burn a place called Gongee; which he performed, and on the ſailors being ordered to repair to the boats, three were miſſing, ſuppoſed to be killed: but it appeared afterwards, that they had ſtraggled into the country, and fallen aſleep on the ground. The following night, the officers on board the ſhips were much ſurprized to ſee many of the country villages in flames: a ſight they could no way account for. Early next morning, however, a raft was obſerved floating down the river, and on it ſat, with the greateſt compoſure imaginable, our three miſſing ſailors, who gave the following account: that upon waking and finding their companions gone, they thought it proper to ſet fire to all the villages, to intimidate the enemy by their thinking the whole detachment ſtill on ſhore: that at day-break, they repaired to the ſhore to ſeek a boat; but finding a raft, they got on it, and floated down the ſtream.

While farther operations were planning, we received the news, that the Nabob had raiſed a formidable army, and was marching from his capital, Muxadabad, towards Calcutta. His forces conſiſted of eighteen thouſand horſe, fifteen thouſand foot, ten thouſand pioneers, and forty thouſand cooleys, attendants, &c. fifty elephants, and forty pieces of cannon. Our forces were ſeven hundred and eleven Europeans in battallion, one hundred artillery, thirteen hundred ſepoys, and fourteen field-pieces; ſix-pounders, beſides the cannon on our batteries. Colonel Clive determining not to retreat, formed his camp near the river, four miles north of Calcutta, between it and the Nabob, who attempted to paſs the Colonel, and to march to Calcutta; upon which

Mr.

Digitized by Google

Clive, at the head of a detachment, drew up in their line of march. A cannonade then began, which, effecting nothing, the Colonel returned to his camp.

Next day meſſieurs Walſh and Scrafton were ſent to the Nabob, by his deſire, to treat; but, finding he meant only to amuſe, Colonel Clive determined to attack him in his camp that very night. He ſent to the Admiral to acquaint him with the deſign, deſiring a reinforcement of ſailors. Five hundred and ſixty-nine were ſent directly under Captain Warwick, and they joined the army at two in the morning, then under arms. They marched unperceived till day-break. At five they got over the trenches of the Nabob's camp, and then began firing away on all ſides, making their way quite through, and killing many. Unfortunately a thick fog aroſe, and prevented them from finding the head-quarters, which made the victory leſs complete than it would have been; but as the day cleared up, the Colonel withdrew his forces to Calcutta. We loſt fifty men, and the enemy thirteen hundred. The troops arrived at the city at noon; but the Colonel, by a ſpirited and excellent manœuvre, at five in the evening took poſſeſſion of his former camp, and hung, like a heavy cloud ready to burſt on the enemy, who fearing a ſecond ſurprize, kept his troops under arms all night. The next day he made overtures of peace, which were ſigned and ſealed the 9th of February, upon terms which left the Company's poſſeſſions ſecure in that part of the world. The terms would have been more advantageous, had not the Admiral and Colonel juſt received advice of a war with France.

It was then reſolved to attack Chandernagore, the principal ſettlement of the French in this part of the Indies, and ſtrongly garriſoned. The poſt is a regular ſquare, three-fourths of a mile in circumference, with four baſtions, each mounting

ſixteen

Digitized by Google

sixteen guns: there was a dry ditch and a glacis. The latter end of February, Colonel Clive left his camp near Calcutta, and crossed the Ganges. March 8th he turned towards Chandernagore, and the 13th invested it. The next day the garrison made a sally; but Colonel Coote repulsed them, greatly distinguishing himself. The enemy had notice of the preparations made for the attack. To block up the channel of the passage, three ships, loaded with ballast, were sunk in it. Three other large ships lay at anchor above the fort, said to be prepared as fire-ships, to burn the squadron in the night. To prevent this, the Admiral sent all the boats of the ships to cut their cables: this was bravely performed, and they run upon the sands. The tides obliged him to postpone the attack for two or three days.

On examining the sunken ships, it was found, that there was room for the men of war to pass safely between them. The enemy had however erected two batteries of heavy cannon to render this narrow pass more difficult, one of them within musquet shot; this the army was obliged to attack, which they did with great gallantry, and made themselves masters of it, driving the enemies troops before them into the fort.

On the morning of the 23d of March the ships got under sail, and Colonel Clive began firing from a battery, he had erected behind a wall, against the south-east bastion. The Tyger, with Admiral Pocock's flag, took the lead, and got to her station against the north-east bastion. The Kent, with the Admiral's flag, followed her; but an accident drove the Salisbury out of the engagement. While the ships were advancing, the enemy kept up an incessant fire at them, without resistance; but as soon as they were at anchor, they returned it with great fury; and Colonel Clive's troops, at the

Digitized by Google

the ſame time, greatly annoyed them with their muſketry from the neareſt houſes. The fire now became general, and the flank-guns of the ſouth-weſt baſtion, galling the Kent very much, and the Admiral's aids-de-camp being all wounded, Mr. Watſon himſelf went down to order Lieutenant Brereton, who commanded the lower-deck battery, to direct his fire againſt thoſe guns; which being done, were ſoon after ſilenced. One of the enemies ſhot ſetting fire to two or three thirty-two pound cartridges of powder, as the boys held them in their hands to charge the guns, and the wadnets and other looſe things taking fire, the whole ſhip was filled with ſmoke; and the men, in their confuſion, cried out "Fire in the gunner's room;" and ſeventy or eighty of the men jumped out of the port-holes into the boats. Lieutenant Brereton, with ſome aſſiſtance) putting out the fire, called to the men in vain: he then exclaimed loudly, "Are you Britons! You "Engliſhmen, and fly from danger! For ſhame!" This had the effect: they returned to their quarters, and renewed a hot fire. The enemy did not hang out the white flag, till moſt of their guns were diſmounted, and the works almoſt ruined; making a very brave defence. A ceſſation of hoſtilities then took place, and Chandernagore was delivered up to the Admiral.

Three of the Kent's lower-deck guns were diſmounted, and the ſhip received one hundred and thirty-eight cannon-ſhot through her ſide, beſides much damage in her maſts and rigging; thirty-ſeven men were killed and ſeventy-four wounded. Captain Speke was dangerouſly wounded in the leg, and the ſame ſhot carried off the thigh of his ſon, Mr. William Speke; and the Admiral had the unhappineſs to ſee both the father and the ſon fall at the ſame inſtant. The Captain, ſeeing his ſon's leg hanging only by the ſkin, ſaid to the Admiral, "Indeed

Digitized by Google

"Indeed, Sir, it was a cruel ſhot to take both fa-
"ther and ſon." Mr. Watſon's heart was too full to make the leaſt reply, but ordered them both to the Surgeon immediately. The ſon's leg was obliged to be amputated above the joint, and he bore the operation with incomparable reſolution; but in ten days after bad ſymptoms came on, and on the 13th day he died. The Captain himſelf recovered, and afterwards commanded the Reſolution of ſeventy guns in the memorable engagement under Sir Edward Hawke off Belliſle, and obliged the Formidable to ſtrike to him: a ſhip ſuperior to his own.

By the reduction of Chandernagore, the French power and commerce in Bengal were totally ruined. Above one hundred and thirty thouſand pounds in valuable effects were found there. This capture was ſcarcely made, before the forces found it neceſſary to begin a freſh war with the Nabob Serajah Dowla. From the very ſigning the treaty that had been made with him, he had proved, by his actions, that he meant it only as an expedient to gain time. He had preſumed to ſend poſitive orders to us not to beſiege Chandernagore, and had ordered two thouſand men to the aſſiſtance of the garriſon. A French corps under Mr. Law was in his pay, and he had invited Buſſy, with the French army, into Bengal; and although four months had elapſed, the moſt material articles of his treaty he had not executed. Self-defence, therefore, had made the council conclude on the neceſſity of oppoſing a man who only waited the arrival of the French army to extirpate them.

The Nabob, after his taking Calcutta, had conducted himſelf with ſuch cruelty and oppreſſion towards his ſubjects, that the grandees had formed a conſpiracy againſt him. Jaffier Ali Khan was at the head of it: an account of it was communicated to Colonel Clive, and the ſecret committee at Calcutta,

Digitized by Google

cutta. They did not hesitate to come into it, and the whole was left to the management of Colonel Clive and Mr. Watts. That the latter might not have too many conferences with Jaffier, the secret was entrusted to one Omichund, a Gentoo merchant, a man of the greatest cunning, insatiably covetous, and strongly suspected of having fomented the mischiefs upon the English to get money himself. No sooner was this man in the secret, and the treaty with Jaffier ready to sign, than he demanded one quarter of all the Nabob's treasure for himself, supposed to amount to eighty millions sterling.

This demand he sunk to thirty lack of rupees, or threatened immediately to betray them. Mr. Watts informed the committee of the necessity of temporizing with him, and contrived that two treaties should be sent up to Meer Jaffier, one the real, and the other fictitious, in which the thirty lack were given to Omichund. This fictitious treaty was signed by Mr. Clive, and all the secret committee. But Mr. Watson would not, from a principle of delicacy, though he applauded the artifice by which such a consummate rogue was outwitted. By the treaty, which made Jaffier a Nabob, he engaged to pay the company one million two hundred and fifty thousand pounds. To the English, for the plunder at Calcutta, six hundred and twenty-five thousand pounds. Ditto from the Gentoos and others, two hundred and fifty thousand pounds. Ditto from the Armenians eighty-seven thousand five hundred pounds. The whole to be at the disposal of Admiral Watson, Colonel Clive, Roger Drake, William Watts, James Kilpatrick, and Richard Becher, Esquire.

All things being prepared, the army began their march towards Muxadabad, against Serajah Dowla. It consisted of seven hundred and fifty military, one hundred and fifty of the train, two thousand one hundred

hundred ſepoys, eight cannon, and one haubitzer. They arrived the 22d at Plaſſey-grove, after a very fatiguing march through water almoſt up to the ſoldiers waiſts; and hearing that the Nabob's vanguard of ſix thouſand men was within three miles, the Colonel ordered an advance-guard of two hundred Europeans, and three hundred ſepoys, with two pieces of cannon, to poſt themſelves at Plaſſey-houſe. The next morning early, the Nabob marched towards the grove with deſign to ſurround us; upon which the Colonel immediately formed. The enemies army came forwards in deep columns, with fifty-three pieces of cannon, from eighteen to thirty-two pounders, diſperſed between the diviſions of the troops, and a body of fifty French, with a large detachment, lodging behind ſome banks, began a briſk cannonade; it was anſwered, and continued till twelve o'clock. A heavy ſhower of rain then fell, and the Nabob's horſe advanced as if to take advantage of it; but when they found our field-pieces playing, notwithſtanding the rain, their ardour was checked. The canonade continued till three in the afternoon, when they retired to their old camp. A large corps was then ſeen to the left: they could not tell whether they were friends under Jaffier, or a party to attack the village. They proved the former: but we knew not their ſignals from the miſcarriage of a meſſenger, and they were kept at a diſtance by our field-pieces. Colonel Clive leaving orders with Major Kilpatrick to ſend him notice if the Nabob ſhould make any new motions, went into Plaſſey-houſe, to put on dry cloaths; here he received information that a detachment of his troops was marching with ſome field-pieces to attack the banks which were occupied by the French, but who had abandoned it. The Colonel, aſtoniſhed at ſuch a ſtep being taken without his orders, rode after the troops, and overtook them at the banks: they were under Major

Digitized by Google

jor Kilpatrick, who the Colonel ordered under arreſt, but was pacified by his apology. He took the command of the detachment himſelf, ordered Major Coote to attack a large body of horſe and foot on a riſing ground, and another officer to ſtorm the angle of the camp. Both theſe attacks were ſucceſsful, and a general rout enſued. The Nabob's army conſiſted of twenty thouſand horſe, and forty thouſand foot; their cannon, camp, baggage, elephants. &c. fell into our hands. Different accounts of this battle have been given with a view to tarniſh Mr. Clive's glory, but this is minutely true, and agrees entirely with Sir Eyre Coote's account given before a committee of the Houſe of Commons.

Meer Jaffier joined the army next morning, and the Colonel ſaluted him Subadar, or Nabob, of Bengal, Bahar, and Orixa, and adviſed him to march after Seraja Dowla to Muxadabad, who diſguiſed himſelf in order to make his eſcape; but was taken, thrown into priſon and executed. The 27th of June Colonel Clive made his public entry into that city, and the 29th the new Nabob was enthroned. He afterwards punctually fulfilled the articles that had been agreed upon.

Notwithſtanding theſe ſucceſſes Mr. Law, the French Commander, ſtill remained with a ſmall body of troops with which he had made his eſcape northwards towards Patna. To clear Bengal from ſuch a reſtleſs enemy, Major Eyre Coote was ordered to head a detachment, which accordingly marched from Muxadabad the 6th of July, amounting to two hundred and twenty-three Europeans, two pieces of cannon, three companies of ſepoys, fifty laſcars, and ten pioneers: he was accompanied by Mr. Johnſtone, a gentleman in a civil employment, and who acted as the Major's Secretary. In this expedition he met with great difficulties in conveying his troops ſometimes by land, and ſometimes

on

Digitized by Google

on the Ganges, for want of the requiſite boats and trackers. It was the 16th before he could get to Goujapour, where he learned that the French had halted there two days. On the 17th he arrived at Pyntaby, a pretty ſtrong poſt on a hill, and learned that the French had left it two days before. He puſhed on to Bolgutta, the ſituation of which is exceedingly pleaſant. Here the ſepoys made great complaints of the fatigues they had undergone by continually marching through bad roads. On the 18th the Major proceeded to Baghelpoor, where he received a letter from Colonel Clive, incloſing orders from the Nabob to the Rajahs to ſupply the Major with every thing he wanted.

The 19th he put off in boats from Baghelpoor. He ſoon paſſed a moſque built by Shah Zada, moſt beautifully ſituated on a high rock by the river's ſide, and a pretty houſe romantically ſituated on a ſtill higher rock in the middle of the river. It was inhabited by Faquiers, who ſeemed to think they honoured the Major greatly by taking ſome money of him. The 20th he arrived at Gonngat Nulla, where he learned that the French were ſix miles from Patna. The 22d he got to Nabobgunge, the next day to Lutchinpoor. The 24th he marched by land to Punaruck. In this march the European ſoldiers expreſſed the greateſt diſcontents at their fatigues, and the want of ſhoes and arrack; and at laſt poſitively refuſed to go any farther. Upon this he reimbarked the men. The 25th he got to Bykulpoor. The 26th he reached Patna, and quatered his troops at the Engliſh factory; but there the Nabob of the province declined ſeeing him. He alſo wrote a letter to the Nabob of Oude, Sujah Dowla, deſiring him to prevent the French entering his territories, but if they were already in them, to ſeize and deliver them up to him. The Major alſo finding that the diſpoſition to mutiny continued among the ſoldiers,

Digitized by Google

diers, tried many of them by a court-martial, and thirty of the ringleaders were punished. This did not, however, prevent the sepoys, who, when they were paraded to march off, grounded their arms to a man, and would march no farther. It was with great difficulty the Major induced them to take them up again. The 30th was spent in paying the men, and adjusting every thing for the march. The 31st they went to Dunapoor: here he sent three messengers to find the French camp, and bring him intelligence. The 1st of August they reached Munere at the conflux of the Soan and Ganges. The next day advice was received by the return of the three messengers, that the French were arrived at Banaras, thirteen days before: that Sujah Dowla protected them, as they were to enter into his service; and that seven thousand men were encamped near them, who would join them in case of need: also, that the roads were all full of water. Upon this the Major called a council of war, in which it was unanimously agreed to give over the pursuit, and returning to Patna wait for fresh orders from the Colonel. Soon after a letter arrived, directing him to be attentive to supporting the Company's black agents, who were employed in collecting salt-petre. This was an object the Major and Mr. Johnstone had attended to from first entering the province, knowing of how great importance it was to the Company, and to the whole English nation. They planned a new mode of collecting it, which, Mr. Johnstone having represented to the Governor and Council of Calcutta, was afterwards persued and found very serviceable.

The 13th the Major got back to Patna, where he found a very difficult task awaited him to bring the Nabob Ramnarair to strict obedience to Jaffier Ali Khan. The 1st of September he received an order from Major Kilpatrick, commanding-officer at Muxadabad,

Digitized by Google

adabad, to return thither with his whole detachment. On the 12th the troops embarked, and the 13th arrived safe at Muxadabad. This upon the whole was an uncommon expedition: though it was not successful in the capture of Mr. Law and his party, yet Ramnarain, the most powerful Raja in the country, was brought to swear allegiance to the Nabob, and a great insight was gained by it into the saltpetre business.

April 27th, 1756, Mr. Watson, with his squadron, left Bombay, and once more sailed for the Coromandel coast, arriving in Fort Saint David's Road the 14th of May.

Aug. 15th, my good friend Admiral Watson died; in consequence of which, and of my constitution being greatly impaired by the unwholesome climate of Bengal, I came to a resolution of quitting the service. Mr. Doidge, the late Admiral's Secretary, and Mr. Pye, Storekeeper to the squadron, were of the same mind. Admiral Pococke gave his consent. November the 19th we left Calcutta, and embarked in a small boat on the Ganges, being provided with a letter of recommendation from Mr. Gee, a free merchant in Bengal to Baron Kniphausen, Governor of the isle of Karec, in the Persian gulf. A young gentleman, Mr. Pigot, went with us. As we designed returning to England by Persia, we agreed to appoint Mr. Doidge our Chief, and Mr. Pye our Secretary. The 21st we and our servants went on board the Cumberland; and the 25th in the Revenge, an armed frigate of the Company's, which the Admiral had appointed to carry us to Bombay. Dec. 2d, we were in thirteen degrees north, the latitude of Madras. The 8th we were in sight of Ceylon, and the 14th anchored in Columbo road. This is the chief settlement of the Dutch on the Indies, next to Batavia. It is in the north-west side of the island, situated on a gently-rising ground.

The

Digitized by Google

The ſtreets are well contrived, aud have a fine row of trees on each ſide, and between each tree a graſs-plot of beautiful verdure. The ſtreets croſs each other at right angles, ſo as to form much the moſt beautiful town we had ſeen in India. Towards the ſea the fortifications are but indifferent, but then no enemy can approach near enough to do them any conſiderable damage; but towards the land they are ſo ſtrong, that all the Europeans in India collected could make no impreſſion on them. There is always a garriſon of thirteen hundred Europeans, all fine-looking healthy young men, for in our whole day's walk we did not ſee three who appeared to be more than forty years of age. Among a variety of military and naval ſtores, we remarked a great number of fine maſts, ſome of which were as large as the middle-piece of a ſeventy-gun ſhip's main-maſt.

We were introduced to the Dutch Governor but he received us with much haughtineſs. Dec. 17th we ſet ſail. The 19th we were off Anjengo, on the Malabar coaſt, which lies in latitude eight degrees thirty-five north, and is the moſt ſoutherly of our ſettlements: the fort is ſmall, but neat and ſtrong: being a ſquare with four baſtions, having eight guns mounted on each, eighteen pounders. The 25th we anchored in Cochin road, belonging to the Dutch. The 31ſt we arrived at Tellichery, which we left the 3d of January, 1758, and on the 8th anchored in the road of Goa: here we ſtaid till the 11th; and on the 24th arrived at Bombay: we waited on Governor Bouchier, who received us very politely, and told us that the Swallow, Captain Price, belonging to the Company, was loading for Gombroon in Perſia, and we were welcome to take a paſſage in her. We gladly accepted the offer. We embarked February 8th, our party being encreaſed by Mr. Alms, a Lieutenant in the navy, and Mr. Pigot, who determined

Digitized by Google

termined to go by land with us, inſtead of taking a paſſage in a ſhip home.

Feb. 14th paſſed by Surat. The 25th we ſaw the coaſt of Arabia Felix. March 1ſt we diſcovered the Perſian ſhore, and the 9th anchored in Gombroon bay. This place is ſituated at the foot of a very high mountain, which, by intercepting the paſſage of the land-wind, makes it intolerably hot. The Engliſh and Dutch factories, at preſent, give it the only conſequence it has. In the months of May and September, the air is perfectly peſtiferous. When we left Calcutta, we flattered ourſelves of having a quick paſſage to Baſſora; but a French frigate of war being in the ſeas, we waited longer than we otherwiſe ſhould. Mr. Douglas, Chief of the factory, diſpatched the Succeſs grab, Captain Lindeſey, to put us aſhore on the iſle of Karec. March 17th we took our leave of Gombroon, and the 19th paſſed Congo Bender, arriving at Karec the 30th, which lies in twenty-nine degrees one minute north latitude. Captain Lindeſey, and Meſſieurs Doidge and Pye, went on ſhore after dinner: they were received by the ſecond of the Council, and the military officer, who introduced them to Baron Kniphauſen, to whom they delivered Mr. Gee's letter of recommendation. In the evening the Captain came on board, and gave us an account, that the Baron (who had received them with the utmoſt politeneſs) had, in his opinion, ſuggeſted an excellent plan for our future proceedings, having recommended our landing at Grane on the Arabian ſhore, and to croſs the great deſart to Aleppo: that the Baron knew it to be a road frequented by merchants: that a European, attended only by one ſervant, had ſafely travelled over it; and that the journey would not exceed twenty-five days. The next morning the reſt of us went on ſhore, and were received very kindly by the Baron.

Digitized by Google

Next day we began to pitch the four tents, which we had furniſhed ourſelves with at Calcutta; but before we had finiſhed with the largeſt, the Baron paid us a viſit, and put an entire ſtop to our proceedings, telling us, that thoſe high tents were by no means proper for our purpoſe, ſince they would certainly diſcover us a great way off, and give thoſe Arabs we took with us, too high an opinion of our wealth: they were alſo, he ſaid, too heavy and unwieldy, and promiſed to provide us with proper ones in their ſtead. Some Arabian merchants preſent, agreed in theſe remarks. He then examined the reſt of our baggage, and ſmiled to ſee a two-wheeled chaiſe we had brought with us. The Arabs ſeemed greatly ſurprized at the conſtruction of this vehicle. He however approved much of our fuſils, bayonets, and piſtols, as well as of the canvaſs and leather portmanteaus, which we had got made on board the grab, in lieu of common wooden trunks. He adviſed us to appear as little fine as poſſible, particularly as to gold or ſilver lace; and in the journey to be cloathed like Turkiſh janizaries.

Baron Kniphauſen is a Pruſſian by birth, brother to the late Ambaſſador of that name at London, formerly in his Pruſſian Majeſty's ſervice; but from a diſguſt left it, and had a lieutenancy in a regiment of French dragoons. He afterwards went to the Eaſt-Indies, and was appointed Reſident to the Dutch company at Baſſora, where he unluckily fell into a diſpute with the Turkiſh government, which ended in his being fleeced of a hundred thouſand rupees. Going backwards and forwards upon this occaſion, he obſerved this iſland of Karec, then belonging to the Sheack of Bundaric, with whom he concerted a ſcheme of ſelling it to the Dutch company, as a thing of little conſequence. Going to Batavia, he made the propoſition of eſtabliſhing a ſettlement there. He was accordingly ſent back with two ſhips and

Digitized by Google

and fifty men; with which he took poſſeſſion of it, the whole inhabitants of the iſland amounting to only one hundred poor fiſhermen.

He had brought but few materials with him, and the General of Batavia, was very ſlow in ſending him the promiſed ſuccours; he was therefore reduced to great ſtreights: in theſe difficulties, he ſent for workmen from Perſia and Arabia, and, with their aſſiſtance, built a little compact fort, ſufficiently ſtrong to defend itſelf againſt the country powers.

When we were there, the fort was a ſquare, built of ſtone, with four baſtions, each of which have eight guns mounted. Before the gate facing the ſea, was a battery, or ravelin, with twelve guns mounted from ſix to eighteen pounders. There were alſo thirty or forty more of various ſizes, lying upon the ground for want of carriages. The fort was garriſoned with one hundred European ſoldiers. He had likewiſe in the harbour two or three armed gallivats, with ſix or eight carriage guns, which were ſuperior to any of the country. Upon the whole, the Baron had made a ſurprizing progreſs for the little time he had been upon the iſland.

Not far from Grane in the Perſian gulf, is an iſland called Bareen, where, at certain known depths, divers go down to the bottom of the ſea, and come up again with their veſſels filled with freſh water. The fact is indiſputable: I had it from undoubted authority. The freſh water is found in holes, or little natural wells, ſome fathoms below the ſurface of the ſea.

During our ſtay here, we learned ſome account of the Arabs. They ſtill continue divided into tribes, and out of as many of theſe as poſſible, it is adviſeable in croſſing the deſert, to ſelect men to attend you from as many tribes as poſſible; for no tribe, of whom you have a only a ſingle man, will hurt or moleſt you. Or if you meet with any of their

Digitized by Google

their ſcouting parties, and can prevail with a ſingle one to enter their tent and drink coffee, or eat rice or any thing, you will then be ſafe from any inſult, either from them or their brethren, it being an invariable maxim with them "never to moleſt thoſe "ſtrangers they have once eaten and drank with." Should any out-party come up with you, and hurry back to their main body to communicate the intelligence; even in that caſe, if one of your men can make greater haſte, and throw himſelf at the Sheick's feet, and demand protection, you may reſt aſſured of your lives and property; for another maxim is, "whoſoever ſhall fly to the powerful, and humbly "implore aſſiſtance, has a right to receive it." This is ſo ſtrong, that was the murderer of the Sheick's father to be the perſon ſo petitioning, he would not be refuſed. The character of the Perſians, is, on the contrary, very different. They are a deceitful treacherous people, faithleſs in their dealings, and ſo addicted to all the little arts of guile and falſhood, that the moſt credulous man will put no truſt in their moſt ſolemn oaths.

The Arab, who was to be our conductor by land, making moſt exorbitant demands, the Baron adviſed us to go to Baſſora; lending us an armed gallivat, and a frankey for the ſervants. April 19th we embarked, and the 21ſt arrived there. On both ſides the river, quite up to Baſſora, are date and apricot-trees regularly planted, and the ſoil yields one continued verdure, a ſight as uncommon in this part of the world as it is beautiful. From the mouth of the river up to Baſſora, is about one hundred Engliſh miles; and near a mile wide.

This city lies in thirty degrees three minutes north, and is ſituated three miles on the weſt bank of the Euphrates, in Aſiatic Turkey: it is twelve miles in circumference, and contains ſixty or ſeventy thouſand inhabitants. A great trade is carried on here,

Digitized by Google

through a navigable canal, which is cut to the river; there is a daily intercourſe with Bagdad by water on the two great rivers. The beſt building in it, is the caravanſera, which is large, full of ſhops, with different kinds of merchandize, and is a good market, well furniſhed with all ſorts of meat, except pork: the mutton is excellent. Nothing can be pleaſanter than the face of the country; large vineyards, interſperſed with roſe-trees, fields of corn ſcattered up and down, and a pictureſque view of the river.

Soon after our arrival, we waited on Mr. Shaw, the Eaſt India Company's Reſident, who received us politely, and with hoſpitality; the converſation turned on our journey to Aleppo: the whole company were unanimous in adviſing us to go by water to Bagdad, and then ſet off with the caravan, which was to leave that place.

In this company was a Mr. Barton, who having acquired a handſome fortune in India, returned to England, ſettled as a country gentleman, and ſerved the office of High Sheriff for his county. Being neceſſitated to return to India to ſettle ſome affairs, he had the courage to fit out a ſmall Folkſtone cutter, in which he actually ſet ſail from England for the Eaſt Indies; but ſoon after his putting to ſea, he was, luckily perhaps, taken by a French privateer, and carried into Vigo. From hence, he got a paſſage to Leghorn, where he took ſhip again, and got ſafe to Scanderoon. Here from impatience, he would not wait for the caravan, but ſet out for Aleppo, attended only by his ſon, a ſervant, and a few camels. He was robbed by ſome Arabs; yet when he got to Aleppo, the whole factory could not perſuade him to wait for a caravan only a fortnight. He ſet out for Bagdad, with only his ſervant, and two or three camels, leaving his ſon at Aleppo For a few days they went on over the deſert without interruption.

Digitized by Google

terruption. At length five or six hundred Arabs approached. Mr. Barton drew a brace of piſtols, and preſented them. Aſtoniſhed at his raſhneſs, they made a ſtand, ordering him to throw down his arms: he refuſed, declaring in a high tone of voice, he would kill ſome of them, if they dared to approach nearer. They then ſurrounded, knocked him down, ſtripped him naked, and left without a drop of water, or a morſel of proviſions. When they were gone, Mr. Barton accepted a pair of breeches, which his ſervant offered him, and they ſet out bareſooted in the track for Bagdad. After paſſing two or three days, without meeting with any other ſupport than the truffles of the deſert, which happened then to be in ſeaſon, they luckily met another tribe of Arabs; to whoſe Sheick they repeated their diſaſters, and begged aſſiſtance: he afforded them every help in his power; and as ſoon as they were recovered enough to ſet forward, he ſent his ſon to conduct them, till they were under the protection of another Sheick, by whom they were again entertained in the ſame hoſpitable manner, and diſmiſſed with freſh guards and paſſports, and in this generous manner they were treated, till they were delivered ſafe into the hands of our countrymen at Bagdad. From hence Mr. Barton went down the Tygris to Baſſora, where we met with him. He was at that time clothed like a poor Turk, without ſhirt or ſtockings: his beard was grown to an uncommon length, and he declared, that he would indulge himſelf in few of the comforts, and none of the elegancies of life, till he arrived ſafely at Calcutta, the place of his deſtination.

April 24th was Mr. Shaw's levee-day; his room was full of Arabian, Turkiſh, and Armenian merchants. Moſt of them were large-ſized men; fine eyed, well proportioned, and of good complexions. Mr. Shaw ſhewed us a long-boat of his, fitted up

Digitized by Google

as a little yacht, which he was so kind as to lend us to Hilla, in our way to Bagdad.

April 27th we went on board, and began to track up the Euphrates, that is, were drawn by men hired on purpose. M. Hemet of French extraction, ruined in his circumstances by the civil wars in Persia, joined us in his way to Bagdad, where his family resided, from whence he proposed carrying them to Venice, his wife's native place.

April 28th we found it very pleasant on the river. We passed a small Arab camp, in which were many sheep. The desert came up close to the river on the left-hand side. In twenty-four hours we sailed seventy-five miles.

April 29th we made sail again, but were afterwards forced to track beyond Corna: the shores are very pleasant, particularly that on our left, where is a great deal of ripe corn, which the people are now gathering in; on the other side large numbers of cattle are grazing. Latitude, by observation, thirty-one degrees north. At eight in the evening we crossed the river with new trackers, having first filled their bellies with mutton and rice. They soon after ran away: on this we hauled into the middle of the stream and anchored, got our guns loaded with grape-shot, and our small arms ready to prevent being surprized by the Arabs.

The 30th our trackers returned, and we had every reason to believe they had run away at the instigation of the *Chocarda*, a Turkish officer sent with us by the government, to see that we met with no interruption. We still saw great numbers of cattle grazing on the banks of the river; and also a boy crossing it on the backs of buffaloes, shifting himself from one to another with great dexterity, as often as he found it necessary for the better conducting his herd. Near Moochalban, a small village, we saw ten or twelve wild hogs, at a little

Digitized by Google

diſtance from the river. Meſſieurs Doidge and Pigot went aſhore in hopes of killing one, but they ran into the ruſhes. In the evening we took a walk on the left-hand ſhore, and found the banks of the river very pleaſant: that part of the land over which the water had lately flowed, is heavy, and incruſted with ſalt-petre. The Arabs cut trenches to let in the water of the river, to which is owing the verdure, which extends a mile from the river, and terminates in the deſert.

May 1ſt we paſſed a town called Newaſhee. The country hitherto has been ſo level, that we have not wanted an horizon for obſervations, at noon, with Hadley's quadrant. Corn-fields are not now ſo plentiful as formerly. The corn in general was ripe, and much of it gathered in; but ſome was green on the ground. Much troubled with the inſolence of our Chocarda, and the impoſitions of the trackers. The firſt, though he had before taken a cheerful glaſs with us, the very ſame evening drank a pint of Claret off at a draught, and finiſhed the bottle next morning. He makes it a rule to call for punch every quarter of an hour, beſides drams at intervals. Coffee, the Turks common regale, he often refuſes, and has forbidden its being gotten for him; he ſays, that he likes punch better, but prefers claret (at ten ſhilling a bottle) above all other liquors.

May 2d anchored abreaſt of the village Arſija. We now loſt ſight of the corn-fields: the country, near the river, is covered with a ſtrong-ſcented ſhrub. Meſſieurs Alms and Pigot went on ſhore with their fuſils, in hopes of ſhooting partridges, which are here in great plenty. They ſaw many, but killed none. We hear every night a hideous howling of jackalls; and our trackers are fearful of meeting with lions.

Digitized by Google

May 3d freſh trouble from our Chocarda, who gave us falſe alarms of the Arabs. No villages, corn-fields, or paſture-lands, nothing but wild ſhrubs on the banks of the river, and the deſert is only a quarter of a mile off. Numbers of partridges and pidgeons ſtill.

May 4th. The road for our trackers, is here in general very bad, they are obliged to work much in the water. Great quantities of partridges and doves are yet to be ſeen. The muſquetos are intolerable.

May 5. This evening, had it it not been for the muſquetos, would have been very pleaſant. On both ſides the river are willow and poplar trees: a number of birds rooſt in them.

May 6, anchored abreaſt of Samava, a walled town, the houſes built of mud, governed by a Sheick: we ſoon after paſſed a river, and got into a perfect level, which made all the country appear a watered marſh. We ſoon came abreaſt of two large Arab camps, in the wildeſt and moſt dreary country I had ever beheld.

May 7th we got into a very delightful meadow country, pretty well inhabited by Arabs and their herds, and watered plentifully by the river: this green and watery proſpect, extends as far as the eye can reach. We paſſed four or five Arabs with lances, theſe we apprehend are ſome of the banditti: who infeſt the banks of this great river. A ſingle perſon, or company of travellers unarmed, might be in great danger from them. Several Arab encampments are in ſight pitched on the ſmall riſing ſpots, which are ſcattered here and there about this overflown country. The preſent Arabs are, like their forefathers, a moveable people: they travel every way, and pitch their tents or ruſh-houſes, as the ſoil beſt ſerves for feeding their cattle, of which they ſeem to have great plenty.

May

Digitized by Google

May 8th, paſſed on the right a plantation of cotton-trees, in a very fertile ſoil, and more raiſed from the river, than we have lately obſerved: but ſoon got again into a flat overgrown meadow country, with encampments of Arabs, their families and cattle. This afternoon, Mr. Alms killed with a ſingle ball, at the diſtance of about two hundred and fifty yards, a beautiful pheaſant-coloured curlew.

May 9th. Our trackers ſtate is ſuch, as calls aloud for pity and plenty of food: they have worked ſeven hours in ſedge and water breaſt high.

May 10th. The land here is on the drain, it having been overflowed. In ſight were many comfortleſs huts, ſome placed on the very water, and all on damp ground, drained by a ſurrounding ditch. I never before ſaw ſuch miſerable places of abode: it is only one apartment, which contains the man, wife or wives, children, dog, and now and then two or three fowls. One buffalo cow they always have, which every morning and evening is driven home to give milk. In the afternoon, we had on both ſides a fine level paſture country, well inhabited with buffalos, oxen, cows, and ſheep: the land on the left is lower than the river; but the water is prevented from overflowing by a bank, which has been thrown up by art, and conſtantly kept in repair. In the evening, we drew near to Dewana, where reſides Aly Aga Baſha. All the country about it, is neatly cultivated for paſturage, the river being with great care and judgment admitted or ſhut out agreeable to the neceſſity of the herdſman.

May 11th, we ſaluted the Governor with ſix guns and eight bounces, and going on ſhore we paid our reſpects to him: M. Hamet acting as our interpreter. Dewana lies in latitude thirty-one degrees fifty-ſix minutes: it is a conſiderable town, built with mud. The Governor is obliged to pay annually into the treaſury of the Baſha of Bagdad fifteen hundred purſes;

Digitized by Google

but Ally Aga remits at leaſt three thouſand, which he gets by fining the Arabs for different crimes, particularly robberies. The Scheiks pay them in cattle, but the Turks preſently convert them to caſh. By this means he eſcapes the reputation of hoarding for himſelf, and makes the Baſha of Bagdad his friend. We here diſmiſſed our Chocarda.

May 13th, got only eleven miles, latitude thirty-two degrees four minutes north. May 14th, a woman ſwam acroſs the river, puſhing a baſket before her; yet it is here eighty yards broad.

The 16th we got to Hilla, and going on ſhore were introduced to the Governor Chonder Aga. We were lodged in the beſt rooms in the palace. We were accompanied to and from the bagnio by an officer carrying a ſilver-headed ſtaff. At our return to the ſeraglio we found ſix or eight diſhes placed upon our table, with our ſtools ſet round it; and though the whole was dreſſed after the Turkiſh manner, it was by no means diſagreeable. An invitation was alſo given to us, that in regard to our liquors we ſhould be quite free and unreſtrained. Whilſt we ſat, Chonder Aga was on a terrace: his Treaſurer accompanied us the whole evening, who eat, and would have drank wine with us alſo (as he whiſpered to our interpreter, had he not been ſurrounded by many obſervers, who were aſſembled to remark our cuſtoms). They were much entertained at our way of eating, for they never uſe knives, forks, chairs, or tables. When the cloth was taken away, a meſſenger came from the Governor to let us know, that as he wiſhed us to be gay, and fearing his preſence might be a reſtraint upon us, he had withdrawn to the Mufti's. The bottle then paſſed briſkly. A glaſs of wine was ſtolen for two lookers-on, a ſon and nephew of the Governor, which they drank in a private room. On the Treaſurer's taking leave, he told us every thing for our journey

Digitized by Google

journey to Bagdad ſhould be ready in the morning.

May 17th, we ſet forward, and croſſed the Euphrates on a bridge of thirty-eight boats: we made a little caravan of fifteen camels, thirteen horſemen well armed, ſix mules and aſſes, beſides our proper ſervants. We paſſed a ſandy plain, and met with ſeveral hot blaſts from the deſert.

May 18th, we came to a caravanſera at Horta, a ſmall village: it was large enough to receive five hundred men, beſides a great many beaſts. The man in waiting ſupplied us with ſtraw and water for our beaſts. We paſſed many travellers: the road is broad and good, the country flat, and hath many paths or tracks of camels, &c. but no cultivation in ſight. This is ſaid to be the plain in the land of Shinar where Babylon once ſtood.

May 19th, we got to another caravanſera, where we found a fire ready to make our coffee, and were refreſhed by ſtanding before it. One of my friends was here much hurt at ſeeing two or three pretty women employed like horſes or aſſes in drawing water from a well. But if women are ſo bad off in this country, what are we to ſay to the poor trackers, who, beſides the danger of being devoured by lions, and other wild beaſts, muſt drag like horſes through briars, buſhes, water, mud, ruſhes, &c. and this too in the coldeſt ſeaſon, and the darkeſt night. About this village the country is pleaſant: we ſaw a great deal of wheat growing, and large numbers of cattle grazing. In the evening we diſcovered the minarets of the moſques in Bagdad. For ſome miles, on both ſides the road, were many flocks of ſheep, herds of goats, and other cattle, as well as large ſpots bearing wheat: the ſoil is good, and wants only a little induſtry to cultivate and improve it. We took notice of a building to our left, which here paſſes for the ruins of the tower of

Digitized by Google

Babel: they call it Nimrod's tower. In the evening we entered the old town, or that which lies west of the Tygris. The public buildings are better than those of Bassora, but the best would be esteemed unfit for a private gentleman of a thousand pounds a year in England.

The following are the respective distances of the principal places: from Bassora to Corna, seventy-five miles; Corna to Cota, sixty-nine; Cota to Samava, one hundred and forty-seven; Samava to Lembloon, sixty-five; Lembloon to Hascar, thirty-one; Hascar to Hilla, fifty-two; Hilla to Bagdad, fifty: in all four hundred and eighty-nine miles.

We were sorry to find the Aleppo caravan had left Bagdad before our arrival: this was a melancholy piece of news to every one of us, but especially to me, on account of my ill health. The prospect before us of waiting still longer, before we could go over the desert, could not fail to make us very uneasy. Mr. Hamet endeavoured to persuade us not to leave the place till October: he urged my bad health, the increasing heat of the weather, the danger of our meeting with those noxious blasts, called, in the Arabian language, *Samiels*; hot and sudden gusts of wind, to which travellers are exposed in passing the desert of Arabia, supposed to be the destructive east wind mentioned by Job, and some of the Prophets. The common period of them is from the middle of June, till the end of August, when they commonly bring instantaneous death to every man and beast that happens to stand with his face towards them. Providentially a short warning of them is given by a change in the air: when this is perceived all travellers must, as the only means of safety, instantly fall with their faces to the ground, and so remain till the samiel is passed. This pestilential vapour flies swift, and does not expand itself far.

May

Digitized by Google

May 20th, we were visited by many Jews, Armenians, and Italian merchants. Our future journey naturally became the subject of conversation: it was agreed by all, that unless we set off by the middle of June, we must find the desert extremely distressing. It was proposed to go by Mosul and Diarbekir——Having received compliments from the Romish Bishop of Babylon, we paid him a visit.

May 26th. Mr. Alms and I rose at four this morning, took a ride round both towns, accompanied by the Bishop and Mr. Garden: the old one we judged to be five miles in circumference; the other is not quite so large. The Bishop thinks they both contain four hundred and fifty thousand souls. It is surrounded by a good wall with many turrets, and a parapet for musquetry; there are also nine bastions, each mounting eight brass guns, but in bad order, and of irregular sizes; and in the whole city mounted, and on the ground, one hundred and fifty cannon. The wall all round is full of loopholes for musquetry, and has in its inside little chambers or lodgments for the soldiers. From the bottom of the ditch to the top of the wall is about forty feet: the desert comes quite up to the foot of the glacis.

Basha Solyman is the chief commander, at Bagdad, under the Grand Seignior: in effect, he is the supreme Lord himself of this part of the empire. So far from sending a revenue to the Porte, he brings his master every year in debt for fortifications, troops, &c. The Grand Seignior has more than once tried to supersede him, but being beloved by forty thousand janissaries, under his command, they would admit no other Basha. Four different messengers have been sent for his head: but the wary Solyman, instead of reverently kissing the mandate, has always made it a rule to send the heads of those messengers to Constantinople. He keeps

Digitized by Google

keeps his provinces in good order, for the people have a high opinion of his military ſkill and proweſs. The janiſſaries are much diſpoſed to be inſolent to ſtrangers, but awed by the preſent Baſha's power, the ſubjects of Europe not only live in peace, but have great reſpect ſhewn them. The forces kept up conſiſt of five thouſand horſe, one thouſand Aſſaſs, and forty thouſand janiſſaries, many of whom are tradeſmen. On a ſudden, however, the Baſha could not ſend into the field above ten or twelve thouſand men, but in a little time he could make them up thirty thouſand.

A very intelligent gentleman gave me the following account of the Turks: they are not allowed an unlimited number of wives, but confined to four at the moſt, and theſe they marry for life: if above four women, the reſt ſhould be of the huſband's ſlaves, for he has no property in his wives ſlaves: and intriguing with them is deemed highly ſcandalous. She receives them from her own family on her marriage, and ever remains miſtreſs of them independant of the huſband's authority. It is a miſtake to think the Turks cruel to their ſlaves, as has been erroneouſly imagined; for, excepting thoſe of the gallies, they are the happieſt people in the Grand Seignior's dominions. It is no uncommon thing with them to give their daughters in marriage to their ſlaves, and who are made Governors of places. The Baſhas, and other Turkiſh Governors, are, in general, very diſſolute in their manners; they uſually purchaſe their offices with a ſum of money, but they are ſure to reimburſe themſelves out of the pockets of thoſe who are ſo unhappy as to live under their juriſdiction. Nobody will ever attend the court of a Baſha if he can poſſibly avoid it: when ſent for, they go with fear and trembling, expecting to have to pay down a ſum of money, or forced into an aſſociation to ruin ſome honeſt man.

They

Digitized by Google

They are, however, afraid of the janiſſaries, who have many privileges: they have a right to purchaſe in all markets, duty-free, as much as their cloaks will cover: they are never puniſhed in publick; but are tried by other janiſſaries in private, and puniſhed only as they approve.

May 27th. This evening our whole party, accompanied by Mr. Garden, ſet off to view an ancient ruin, called *Tauk Keſſera*, which means Keſſera's arch: it lies twenty miles ſouth-eaſt of Bagdad, within a mile of the Tygris. We croſſed a large creek, within three miles of the arch, which we ſaw by the light of the moon. The way was through a thicket of liquorice, caper, low cotton, and cypreſs ſhrubs. Neither Turks nor Arabs know any thing about this ruin. The Biſhop told us, it was commonly ſuppoſed to have been a temple dedicated to the ſun. Mr. Doidge took, with his quadrant, the exact meaſure. The eaſt face of the whole, is three hundred feet in length; the breadth of the arch, eighty-five feet, height one hundred and ſix; length of the arched roof, one hundred and fifty: for a very conſiderable way all around it, the ruins of other vaſt buildings are to be ſeen, though in ſuch deſolation, that not the ſmalleſt piece of a wall is now ſtanding. The bricks and mortar are in ſuch quantities, that no doubt can poſſibly remain, that here once ſtood a city of ſeveral miles circumference; and from the account given by hiſtorians of Cteſiphon, there is the greateſt reaſon to believe that on this very ſpot that magnificent and powerful city once ſtood. The tradition is, that it was built by an European Prince, who came into this part of the world with a great army, and ſubdued it. About a mile and half to the eaſtward ſtands an ancient mud-wall, three ſides of a ſquare, above forty feet high, and thirty thick, and each ſide about a mile in length; which probably was a citadel to this ancient city.

May

Digitized by Google

May 29, returned to Bagdad, and the 30th dined with the Biſhop, being very politely entertained. He gave us an account of an ancient pile of buildings, called *Kurman Shah*, ſtill to be ſeen about twelve days journey between this place and Iſpahan, wherein is a great deal of ſculpture of marble, with baſſo and alto relievos, with long inſcriptions in characters known to none of the antiquaries. The letters are neither Perſian, Parthian, Chaldean, Hebrew, Arabic, Greek, Coptic, or any other type, now known in this part of the world.

June 13th. This morning our party, accompanied by Mr. Garden, left Bagdad to view Nimrod's tower, at about nine miles diſtance. The bricks of it are twelve inches ſquare, and four and half thick. The height of the ruin is one hundred and twenty-ſix feet, the diameter one hundred feet, and we ſuppoſed it to be ſolid to the center: the circumference about three hundred feet. The Turks, Jews, and Arabians, are fond of believing this to be the remains of the ancient tower of Babel; but, from its ſituation and other circumſtances, I am clear it could not, but rather ſuſpect it to have been a beacon, or watch-tower, to give notice of the approach of an enemy; or, perhaps, an aſtronomical obſervatory. Returned the ſame day to Bagdad.

June 18th, at five in the afternoon, we left that city. We had thirty mules, eight for the *takht revans*, or litters; two for cages for the ſervants, four ſaddle-mules, ſixteen for baggage; for each we are to give forty-five piaſters; for which the muleteer is to run all riſks, and carry us to Aleppo. We have an Aga to conduct us and overſee the whole. We provided a tent for him, as we were told he would chuſe to live by himſelf.

June 19, being encamped, in order to recollect any thing that may be wanting, we took a walk in one of the Baſha's gardens, and found black and white

Digitized by Google

white grapes quite ripe; mulberries of the European kind, peaches, nectarines, and apricots, almonds, apples, and plumbs, come to perfection here in their proper ſeaſons. The quinces, figs, and pomegranates, were not ripe, though muſkmelons and cucumbers were.

Aga Mahomet carries with him orders from Soliman Baſha for all Governors and Captains between this place and Aleppo; alſo four recommendatory letters to the Baſhas of Moſul, Diabekir, Urfa, and Aleppo: four others from Abdulla, the Kalhier, or Prime Secretary, to the four Kalhiers of thoſe Baſhas. Had we been merchants, inſtead of King's ſervants, we were told we ſhould not have met with ſuch honours, or have been permitted to travel in *takht revans*, or have carried a gilt ball on the top of our tent, none but the Baſha himſelf being allowed this laſt privilege. While we remained here, the Baſha ſaw our gilt ball from his ſeraglio, and inquired whoſe it was: upon being told that it belonged to the tent of the Engliſh travellers, he very obligingly replied, "Take no notice of it."

June 20th, we got to Dokehala, and put up in the beſt houſe the place afforded. Our Aga, who was not in the ſame houſe, came to pay his compliments. He appeared to be a ſenſible grave man, of few words, yet can handſomely expreſs himſelf on particular occaſions.

The 21ſt, we lodged at a caravanſera: two parties, with camels and aſſes, came in from Conſtantinople. The 22d we paſſed a village, from which we got good milk, but no fruit. We obſerved locuſts in great abundance: the ſoil was well cultivated and fertile by means of the river-water being let in. We paſſed many travellers.

The 23d, at two in the morning, we diſcovered a ſmall village to the left, inhabited by the huſbandmen

men of the arable fields: we diſtinguiſhed it by the lights, and the barking of dogs. We put up at Karatapa. In the evening the weather was cloudy, which we very ſeldom had an opportunity of noting before the air ſince we left Baſſora has been very dry, a few nights on the Euphrates excepted. The primings to our fire-locks and piſtols were never damp.

June 24th. The wind blows generally freſh, but ſo loaded with burning particles of ſand, that we find it more refreſhing to ſhut it out, as in the Eaſt Indies, than to admit it. We travelled all night at weſt-north-weſt courſe, having to our right a chain of rocky mountains, among which are ruins of ancient fortreſſes.

June 25, we came to Douzcourmatee, of which the houſes, though built of mud, are good; the gardens are well walled, and yield dates, apricots, apples, and grapes, the latter not ripe. The 26th we ſet off at ſeven in the evening as uſual, and the next day got to Kircoote in latitude thirty-five degrees thirty minutes, of which town the inhabitants generally are maintained by agriculture, the ſoil being very fertile; large quantities of corn are ſent from hence to foreign markets. We got here pretty good mutton, eggs, grapes, apples, cucumbers, figs, ſugar-candy, and bread. The houſe, to which we were conducted, was at the diſtance of a quarter of a mile from the place: it had a pretty garden, with a neat pond, graſs-plats, roſe-trees, and running ſtreams, whoſe banks were agreeably ſhaded by the willow.

The 29th we took with us from Kircoote fifteen armed men, and travelled over a tract, rocky, and perfectly barren. At Alton Couprice we paſſed a ſmall river, which yielded us ſome fine carp: there are ſome, we were told, which weighed two hundred pounds. There is no manufacture here: the people

Digitized by Google

people live by what they get by paſſengers, and by their agriculture. The country in general is hilly. The Curdiſtan mountains are on one ſide, and the Sanjack ones on the other: they are the retreats of the common robbers of the country, who always attack ſuch parties of travellers as they think are unable to reſiſt them. June 30th, we paſſed Arvele, probably the ancient Arbella.

July 1, our Aga found a difficulty at Zaave, to make a Captain of ſoldiery attend us to Moſul; and it was only by threatening him with ſending a diſpatch to Sultan Selyman, that brought him to it. The Captain is ſuſpected of being privately concerned with the robbers of the mountains, and actually ſharing in the plunder in return for his connivance; but this my informer ſaid was no wonder, ſince this very man, and all the people of the place, pay adoration to the devil. I did not at firſt give credit to the aſſertion, but was afterwards aſſured at Moſul of the fact. There are many more of the ſame religion, and among them the Sanjacks. They once profeſſed Chriſtianity, then Mahometaniſm, and laſt of all Deviliſm. They admit that the devil has, at preſent, a quarrel with God, but that the time will come when he will be admitted into the bleſſed manſions. All diſreſpectful expreſſions of him they would puniſh with death, did not the Turkiſh power prevent them. Whenever they ſpeak of him, it is with the utmoſt reſpect; and they always put before his name a certain title, correſponding to that of his Highneſs or Lord.

July 2d, we came to a little town called *Gawerkoe*, inhabited by Chriſtians, who, like the others within the Grand Seignior's dominions, are permitted to live in peace, on condition of paying extraordinary taxes. They ſubſiſt by the profits of their agriculture, and a ſmall manufacture of courſe linnen cloth.

Digitized by Google

cloth. They ſpeak the original Chaldean language, as well as the Turkiſh and Arabian.

July 3d entered Moſul. The caravans for Diarbekir and Aleppo, were employed in paying cuſtoms, and expected to go forward on Friday. This place lies in latitude thirty-ſix degrees thirty minutes, and is the beſt built city in Turkey, that I have yet ſeen. The learned world has been much at a loſs to determine the ſpot, whereon ſtood antient Nineveh. Some think oppoſite to Moſul, others, at ſome diſtance; probably it took in the whole, its circumference was ſixty miles. It ſeems therefore probable, that all the cultivated lands, which now lie around Moſul, were once contained within the limits of Nineveh: what confirms me in this conjecture, is, that much of this ground is now hilly, owing no doubt to the rubbiſh of ancient buildings. This city's manufacture is muſſolen, a cotton cloth, which they make very ſtrong, and pretty fine; agriculture and trade maintains the reſt of the inhabitants. We can get no other fruit here, than poor water-melons and cucumbers. The bread is good, and we think it cheap; it being about five farthings a pound. Terrible are the accounts we hear of the calamities of the province of Diarbekir. The country is now depopulated. The people during the famine eat dogs, and their own dead children. The bodies of the dead lay in the ſheets, for want of people to bury them. The hire of a mule hence to Aleppo, is from thirty to thirty-five piaſtres: laſt year it was no more than twelve. This is one of the conſequences of the late dreadful famine, almoſt every ſpecies of the brute creation having been killed for the ſupport of man. This calamitous viſitation was brought on by a preceding hard winter, which was followed by an innumerable quantity of locuſts, that deſtroyed the fruits of the earth. The people of Moſul, were ſuppoſed, before the famine

Digitized by Google

mine, to have been three hundred thouſand; but now they do not amount to near that number.

Finding the town hot and diſagreeable, our Aga has aſked of the Baſha's Kahier, the uſe of a little villa of his near the town, which was granted at once. The ſituation is a very agreeable one, being quite cloſe to the river, in the middle of a cucumber and melon-garden, and having in view all the villas and gardens, with which the banks of the river are ornamented, beſides that venerable piece of antiquity, Jonah's tomb. Horſe ſoldiers viſit us in the garden every evening, who regale themſelves with cucumbers, each eating ſix or eight very large ones, without either bread or ſalt.

July 10th we mounted, and, with our attendants and baggage, ſet off from Moſul, and ſoon after joined the great caravan upon a riſing ground, near a river called Baduce. For four miles we paſſed over corn-lands: the reſt was a deſert, affording only ſhrubs and thiſtles.

July 11th we were on the banks of the Tygris at old Moſul, where were great numbers of ſheep feeding, a few oxen, and ſome calves. We bought of the Arabs five or ſix ſheep. Eagles and pigeons are here in great plenty.

July 12th, we were an hour paſſing the ruined ſtreets of old Moſul. We then paſſed through a long ſtreet of Arab tents, whoſe inhabitants appeared to poſſeſs large flocks of ſheep. The land we paſſed over to day, was by nature very fertile, though it now produces only wild graſs, flowering ſhrubs and thiſtles. The Curdiſtan mountains are in ſight to the right, and the Sanjacks to the left; diſtant from each other ſometimes about twenty miles: the country between them a mixture of hills, dales, and plains, moſt of the latter covered with a deep rich mould. Here are plenty of partridges: we ſprung the

Digitized by Google

the old ones, and our cattle almoſt trod on their young and eggs.

July 15th we paſſed over a very fine plain, between the eaſtern and weſtern mountains. The ſoil is remarkably good, and capable of producing great crops of grain and fruit, were it but in the hands of induſtrious perſons to cultivate and improve. There was a time, when a ſpirit of induſtry prevailed among the inhabitants of this country, and when the improvement of agriculture was one of the main things that engaged their care and attention; their greateſt Princes looked into every thing that related to it. Such is the account given us by hiſtorians of the ancient inhabitants of theſe provinces. But alas! how is the face of things now changed! for in all that part of Chaldea, Babylonia, Meſopotamia and Aſſyria, which we have paſſed over, no other care ſeems to have been taken of the land, but that it ſhall be capable of producing ſuch a quantity of corn, as barely to ſatisfy the wants of the inhabitants for the enſuing year: ſo that the leaſt failure of ſeaſons, or accidents by locuſts, &c. are ſure to be attended by a famine.

It was pleaſant travelling to-night by the moon, and and afterwards by the ſtars. Not a cloud hath been ſeen in the ſky by day or night for a long time. July 16th, a quarter before twelve, we ſtruck our tents, advancing all night over one of the fineſt plains in the world; the ſoil of the moſt luxuriant richneſs. At ſix we obſerved the minaret of a moſque at Niſibin. As we drew near, we were raviſhed with the ſight of verdure and ploughed lands at a little diſtance from us. The verdure was all fields of Indian corn. There was a plough at work, drawn by two yoked oxen, followed by a man who guided it: the ſhare was caſed with iron, the ſoil was a fine rich mould; but neither the man nor beaſts ſeemed to labour much. At ſeven in the morning we got to Niſibin. From the

Digitized by Google

the ruins we went through, it appeared once to have been a conſiderable place. From every part of the town the moſt delightful views would be ſeen, were the country cultivated and planted. It is one of the places that ſuffered ſeverely by the late famine. It loſt almoſt all its inhabitants, either by death or deſertion. We procured here bread, milk, cucumbers, and pretty good mutton. The price of the firſt is raiſed in fourteen years, four thouſand per cent.

The 18th we left Niſibin, and in the morning put up at Arin, a ſorry village, in which we ſaw a thouſand marks of poverty, deſolation, and diſtreſs. Human ſkeletons laid, from which the fleſh had been eaten by the fowls of the air. A fine plain for many miles in ſight pretty well cultivated, and this year has given it a tolerable crop of corn. Paſſing Merdin, I was informed that a linnen and ſilk manufactory is carried on there; the ſoil about it is very rich, and yields good wheat. We procured from it pretty good beef, bread, milk, a little butter, a few fowls, and ſome fruit. It is remarkable that from Hilla to Bagdad, and from Bagdad to Merdin, not ſix trees are to be ſeen, but what are in private gardens, or on the tops of high mountains.

July 19th we left Arin, and the 20th reſted in a pleaſant meadow covered trefoile, by the ſide of a beautiful rivulet, and continued there ſome hours. The freſh recruit of ſpirits we received on breathing the cool air of the mountains, and our joy in paſſing through a country, covered every where with ſo beautiful a verdure, can only be conceived by thoſe few Europeans, who have laboured through ſultry climates in the hotteſt ſeaſons of the year.

At eight o'clock we renewed our march through a moſt delightful country of pleaſant hills cultivated, and vales interſected with running ſtreams; corn, graſs, flowers, and flowering ſhrubs, grow here in the greateſt plenty. Theſe beauties received

a great

a great heightening by the freſhneſs of the air, and the almoſt conſtant breezes which prevail here.

The 21ſt we received ſeveral falſe accounts of robbers being on the road, which kept us on the alarm, and made us ſend out ſeveral ſcouts for intelligence. As we were riding towards a cultivated ſpot of ground, the occupier of it waved his hand with great emotion to avoid his plantation: we ſuppoſing that every thing had reference to our fears, concluded he meant the robbers were to the left. We kept on through the corn, our ſervant Franciſco, aſking him, "What news?" The Turk or Courd enraged at the damage done to his crop, put his hand to his ſword, and in the moſt violent paſſion replied, "The news he had for him, was, "that he would immediately cut off his head." This threat was all the poor old man could utter. We however ſoon appeaſed his anger. This day we reached Diarbekir: from whence Abdalla Baſha, is to ſet out on Monday for Aleppo, his tents being pitched without the city, and make a gay appearance.

July 23d, the French fathers, who came to pay their compliments to us, confirmed the unfavourable idea we had formed of the Turkiſh government, by aſſerting that their greateſt Baſhas acted ſometimes in concert with the Chiefs of the robbers. The body of them, which we narrowly eſcaped, encamped, but a little while ago, between this place and the Curdiſtan mountains, and continued there ſeveral days without interruption; nay ſent meſſages into the city to the Baſha, and received proviſions from him of many kinds. Their Captain being ill, he requeſted a phyſician, and it was immediately complied with.

Diarbekir is a large and well-fortified city, defended by baſtions and turrets: it has twelve moſques, with minarets; and the houſes are chiefly built of grey moor-ſtone. Two years ago it contained four

Digitized by Google

hundred thouſand ſouls, but in the laſt year three hundred thouſand died, either by cold or famine. Of twenty-ſix thouſand Chriſtians, twenty thouſand died. Before the famine, the city could muſter ſixty thouſand fighting-men, now only ten thouſand. The deſcription of the famine was terrible: all ſorts of brutes were devoured, and human bodies alſo: but in the midſt of all this, the grandees had every thing in plenty, by having monopolized quantities of corn, which they ſold out at extravagant prices, and acquired great fortunes. This might eaſily be, as in ſix months corn roſe from two to ſeventy piaſters. The ſevere winter of 1756, prevented the ſeed being ſown, and the locuſts of 1767 eat up the little there was. The ſeverity of that winter was ſurpriſing: it was common to ſee people fall down dead in the ſtreets. This accounty ſeems very odd, ſince Diarbekir, by Mr. Alms's obſervation, lies only in thirty-eight degrees twenty-two minutes north. Its ſituation muſt have been the cauſe, on a riſing ground in the midſt of an extenſive plain, and the high Curdiſtan mountains lie to the ſouth and eaſt of it, and the Turcomanian to the north, whoſe heads are always covered with ſnow, and now in July ſupply the city with ice. Fuel alſo muſt have been very dear, as it is got from the mountains which lie at ſuch a diſtance. There is now a good deal of arable land near the place, but not a thouſandth part of what there might be, the ſoil being exceedingly fertile.

July 24th the Baſha, with his train, left Diarbekir, and we followed him the ſame day. The next day we croſſed ſome rocky hills and dales. July 26, decamped at twelve at night, and travelled till one in the afternoon over a very rocky hilly country, which yielded only thiſtles, artichokes, and ſome wild flowers, particularly the ſingle white and red holyhock. From ten in the morning to one in the

Digitized by Google

the afternoon the heat of the ſun was exceedingly oppreſſive.

The Baſha's haram, or female train, conſiſts of three takht revans, and five covered cages, all ornamented according to the rank of the women. He always enters the encampments with colours flying and muſic playing, of kettle-drums, trumpets, hautboys, and fifes. He is of the higheſt rank, and to expreſs his dignity has three horſe-tails carried in his train.

Being in want of meat, Kahier ſent us a ſheep: he had made us a preſent of one before. Our Aga ſounded him about our quitting the Baſha's train, and making the beſt of our way to Alleppo; but he would not conſent to it, as robbers, in ſmall companies, infeſt the roads.

July 28th, we ſet out at half paſt two o'clock, and travelled ſeven hours on a good road over a fertile country. In our whole way from Diarbekir we have on our right to the northward, the Turcomanian mountains. To-day we joined a nation of moving Arabs, with their families, and numerous flocks; the latter were made up of the fineſt ſheep, and moſt hairy goats I ever remember to have ſeen. We wanted to buy ſome of them, but could not ſucceed. The tails of the ſheep were ſurprizingly large, not weighing leſs than from twenty to forty pounds each. I have ſeen the ſort in Barbary, but never any ſo large as theſe. The Arabs were juſt come out of the Armenian mountains, and for the ſake of better paſturage, were moving towards the banks of the Euphrates.

July 29th at three in the morning decamped. After a hilly ſandy country, we arrived at a moſt delightful plantation of walnut, willow, and poplar-trees. Near the ground, where we were to encamp, was ſome arable lands cultivated by the Arabs, and upon

Digitized by Google

upon a rivulet is a water-mill. Finding the Baſha travelled much ſlower than we ſhould have done alone, we deſired our Aga to wait upon the Kahier, and ſolicit his good offices with the Baſha to give us an eſcort, that we might be permitted to make the beſt of our way to Bir. This he did: but the Kahier, having mentioned it to the Baſha, received a poſitive refuſal, under pretence, that we were under his immediate protection by a particular recommendation from Solyman Baſha, and, therefore, he was anſwerable for any ill conſequence that might attend an indiſcreet proceeding.

July 31, reſumed our march. The villages all around are deſerted; the Arabian inhabitants having removed themſelves and their effects, through fear of the ſoldiery, and the rapacity of the great men. No flocks, not a ſingle ſheep to be ſeen, and we have no victuals to eat. Aug. 1, we arrived at Bir, on the eaſtern bank of the Euphrates: the buildings are in general in a ruinous condition. There being no bridge here, only three ferry-boats, which were all employed in tranſporting the Baſha's family, &c. we had little hope of croſſing the river for ſome time, and therefore ſeated ourſelves on ſome ruins; but the Baſha riding by, and ſeeing us and our baggage in the open ſtreet, immediately called our Aga to him, and ſternly demanded, "Why the Engliſh gentlemen were thus ſhame-"fully treated?" Upon being informed, he gave ſtrict orders that we ſhould be taken over before any more of his own people or baggage. We had not ſeen him before, and now his behaviour was very humane and polite. The Aga kiſſed the hem of his garment, and we bowed to him, which he returned with a ſmall bending of the cheſt, and a viſible complacency of countenance.

Digitized by Google

By croſſing the river we paſſed from Meſopotamia into Syria. We got at Bir ſheep, eggs, bread, and a few grapes.

Aug. 2, we purſued our march, and the 3d croſſed an artificial mount, from the top of which there is an extenſive proſpect of a fine country, with villages, and the lands about them green with Indian corn. The 4th, we proceeded travelling about three miles an hour, the roads being tolerable: in bad ones we go only two. Upon the whole, from Merdin we have made two and an half an hour; from Bagdad to Merdin three. The 5th, we again deſired leave to quit the Baſha's train, and make the beſt of our way to Aleppo; but being again refuſed, we determined to go without it, and accordingly rode off, and got there that night, having been juſt ſeven weeks in coming from Bagdad, which is diſtant from Aleppo ſix hundred and ninety-eight miles.

Mr. Drummond, the Conſul, received us with the greateſt hoſpitality and politeneſs: and after having refreſhed ourſelves with wines, punch, and excellent beef-ſteaks, to all which we had long been ſtrangers, we betook ourſelves to a comfortable clean bed, where we enjoyed that ſweet repoſe, which only the tired and worn-out travellers can ever truly experience. In the evening we were viſited by the gentlemen of the Engliſh factory.

As the iſle of Cyprus ſeemed to be the moſt proper place for us to get a paſſage down the ſtreights, we reſolved to proceed thither. Aug. 14, we left Aleppo; the 19th we paſſed Ingezeek, and travelled over high mountains; from ſome of which we were raviſhed with the tranſporting view of the long-wiſhed-for Mediterranean ſea. The 20th, we travelled over a moſt agreeable country, abounding in Indian corn, and plantations of olive and mulberry-trees. The ground was quite covered with

Digitized by Google

with myrtle and oleander bushes in full bloom. We got to Latichea, alighting at the Consul's house, from which there is a most delightful prospect of Mount Libanus, and the Mediterranean.

Bassora to Latichea.] Bassora to Corna, seventy-five miles; Corna to Cota, ninety-one; Cota to Dewana, two hundred and eleven; Dewana to Hilla, sixty-two; Hilla to Bagdad, fifty; Bagdad to Kircoote, one hundred and sixty-seven; Kircoote to Arvela, fifty-four; Arvela to Mosul, forty-nine; Mosul to Nisibin, one hundred and three; Nisibin to Arin, twenty-six; Arin to Diarbekir, fifty-eight; Diarbekir to Bir, one hundred and forty-seven; Bir to Aleppo, ninty-four; Aleppo to Latichea, one hundred and two: in all one thousand two hundred and eighty-nine miles.

Sept. 3, Messieurs Doidge and Pye being very anxious to arrive in England, they resolved to-day to proceed to Malta in a Ragusan vessel; but my health would not allow me to accompany them, crowded together in the cabin of a vessel of one hundred and fifty tons.

Latichea is a pretty large town, built of good stone got from the sea-shore. The Governor is appointed by the Basha of Tripoli, and is absolute in his power.

Sept. 27, a Leghorneſe, being bound to Cyprus, I agreed to take my passage in her to that island: embarked October 2, and landed at Larnica the 5th. The island of Cyprus is situated between thirty-three and thirty-six degrees of east longitude opposite the shores of Syria and Cilicia. It extends from east to west two hundred and twenty miles, and is in circuit about five hundred and fifty. The air is so pleasant, the soil so fruitful, and the hills so abounding with metals, that the ancients called it, the *Happy Island*: and the inhabitants, from their lasciviousness, occasioned it to be called *Venus Cypria*.

Oct. 18. At five this morning, I set out on horseback for the top of Mount Croce, or Saint Crux, in company with Mr. Turner the Consul, and his Clerk; we rode through a plain, and passed the remains of thirty-one arches of an aqueduct. As we mounted the hills, we passed the ruins of many buildings, in appearance very ancient, some of brick, others of stone, and many miles in extent. We continued riding till half past eight, still ascending and passing between mountains covered with pine, oak, olive, locust, and walnut-tree. Till a quarter after nine, we continued to ascend Mount Croce. At eleven, leaving our horses at a convent, and mounting mules for safety, we advanced towards the holy cross, a church placed on the very summit of the mountain, and reached it in about half an hour's riding.

By tradition it was built by Saint Helena, mother of Constantine, fourteen hundred years ago. From hence we had a most delightful prospect over the greatest part of the whole island. We got back to Larnica, which is about fifteen miles from the top of the mountains, a little after seven.

Oct. 21, I agreed with the Captain of a Swedish vessel for my own and servants passage to Leghorn. Mr. Turner was so obliging as to trouble himself about my sea-stock, and procured me a hogshead of old Cyprese wine. All the wines almost of this island have in them a peculiar taste of tar: this is owing to the vineyards lying on the sides of the mountains, which are covered with pine-trees, whose juices, washed down by the rains, give this flavour to the grapes. Oct. 26. This day four English gentlemen, who had come from India by land in the same route as I had done, Messieur Gregory, Tottingham, Bailey, and Pasley, arrived here, and paid me a visit. Next day I returned their visit, and offered them the use of the great cabin with me, if they were inclined to go in

Digitized by Google

in the Leghorneſe veſſel. They accordingly agreed with the Captain. They left Bengal in February laſt; touched at Karec and Baſſora, and brought a letter from Baron Kniphauſen, addreſſed to Mr. Doidge and me. From Baſſora, they paſſed to Bagdad by the Euphrates, and then over the great deſert to Aleppo.

October 31ſt we went on board. In our way we touched at Meſſina in Sicily, an iſland which affords the moſt fertile plains, and one of the moſt beautiful proſpects in the whole world; and after the moſt diſtreſsful and alarming voyage I ever made, owing to want of experience in our young commander, we arrived at Leghorn December 4, where we were obliged to perform a tedious forty days quarrentine. January 16th in a tranſport of joy, we left the place of our long confinement, and going on ſhore, paid our reſpects to many friends, who had been exceedingly friendly and polite to us.

Jan. 18th ſeveral of thoſe gentlemen walked round the walls of the garriſon with us. It is a neat compact fortification, with a wet ditch, redoubts, glacis, &c. and from the walls is a moſt beautiful land and ſea proſpect.

Jan. 21ſt. Many gentlemen and ladies of the factory, and our whole party, dined with the Governor to-day, the Marquis de Monte. His ſalary is one thouſand pounds per annum, excluſive of his houſe, firing, wines, and many other articles, beſides many perquiſites. There are ſaid to be fifty thouſand inhabitants in this place, fourteen thouſand of whom are Jews. The trade here is ſtill very great, though of late years, it has been much leſſened by Genoa, Civita Vecchia, Ancona, and Naples being declared free ports.

Jan. 24, Meſſieurs Gregory, Bailey, and myſelf ſet out for Piſa. The road leads partly through a very pleaſant wood, and partly through the moſt de-

Digitized by Google

lightful valley in the world. We got to Pisa by dinner, and then went off for Lucca, travelling over the beſt cultivated fields and vineyards that imagination can conceive. The ſituation of Lucca is delightful, and it is a well-built city.

Jan. 25th we got to Borgiana, where we took horſes for Piſtoria, and then proceeded on for Prata. The people of the country, through which we travelled to-day look gay, and there appears a certain air of cheerfulneſs and content in all their countenances. The women are handſome, and at the ſame time induſtrious: we ſaw none of them but were buſily employed, either in the work of the fields or ſpinning, and knitting in their houſes. In the evening we arrived at Florence. The next day we waited on Sir Horace Man, the Britiſh Envoy, who received us very politely. We afterwards went to the Great Duke's palace of Pitti: among the paintings, &c. I was moſt ſtruck with the following;

A fine picture of Saint Francis in a dark room, with a ray of light darting on his hands and face.

Saint Sebaſtian: the airs of this picture are wonderfully expreſſed.

But the moſt valuable piece in the whole palace, is the incomparable Madona della Segiola, or the Virgin in a chair, with Jeſus in her arms: a ſmall picture, but eſteemed by connoiſſeurs to be the beſt in the whole world: it is by Raphael.

Four beautiful alto reliefs, in ivory.

Jan. 27th we went to ſee the old palace, which is juſtly eſteemed the greateſt repoſitory in the world of both ancient and modern curioſities.

On the floor of the gallery are placed buſts or ſtatues of all the Emperors of Rome. They all deſerve to be taken notice of, either as ſingular in their kind, or admirable for the excellence of their ſculpture.

A Roman gladiator, admiring his lately-gotten prize. A noble piece of ſculpture.

Apollo

Digitized by Google

Apollo ſlaying Marſias. Alexander looking upwards with an air of grief. The judgment of Paris. The ſtatues of Juno, Venus, and Pallas, are placed near him, and are ſo diſpoſed, that Paris, who has the apple in his hand, is made to give the preference to Venus, by fixing his eyes upon her.

A drunken Bacchus, with a cup in his hand, by Michael Angelo.

A moſt excellent buſt of Oliver Cromwell in plaiſter.

The juſtly-celebrated Venus of Medecis, of whoſe incomparable beauty of ſhape, air, and poſture ſo much has been ſaid by travellers.

Two much-admired paintings by Titian. One a portrait, it is ſaid, of his own wife, at full length, lying on a bed, and entirely naked. It ſeems quite alive, and is as finiſhed a painting as the Venus de Medicis a ſtatue. The other a moſt beautiful girl, a favourite miſtreſs of a great Duke, who is alſo painted quite naked.

The following paintings are alſo exquiſitely fine: John Baptiſt's head in a charger, by Caracci.

Mars and Venus, by Rubens.

Charles V. and an Italian lady, by Vandyke.

Adam and Eve, by Albert Durer.

Jan. 29 we went to ſee the chapel of Saint Lawrence, which was begun one hundred and fifty years ago, and yet remains unfiniſhed: it is the burial-place of the Great Dukes of the Medici family. Adjoining is a prodigious large octagon building, with an high dome, which is looked upon as the greateſt deſign now in the world. Each diviſion of the octagon has a magnificent monument with pilaſters, and ornamented with the arms of the family, curiouſly wrought with a variety of marbles. The building is finiſhed from the ground to the upper part of the octagon, and beginning of the dome;

Digitized by Google

the ſcaffolding is ſtill ſtanding, but no workmen have been employed for thirteen years.

Jan. 30, Mr. Tottingham and myſelf having taken leave of all our friends, ſet out from Florence, and after a troubleſome and dangerous journey of two days over the Appenine mountains, we arrived at Bologna; which, for extent and number of inhabitants, is the next city to Rome in the whole eccleſiaſtical ſtate. It abounds in magnificent buildings, and alſo famous for the great collections of capital paintings, but our time would not allow us to feaſt our eyes with them. The ſame ſpirit of induſtry prevails among the females here as in Tuſcany. February 1ſt we left Bologna, reaching Pavia, which is a handſome country town. The roads hereabouts are very bad, from the ſoil being ſo fat and dirty. The country however is very pleaſant, cultivated to the beſt advantage, and laid out in vineyards. The vines here, as in Tuſcany, are ſupported from tree to tree, nicely trimmed, and uniformly planted for many miles together.

We met many carriages drawn by three, four, and ſometimes five pair of yoke-oxen. In the evening we got to Ferrara, a city in almoſt a defenceleſs ſtate; but the ſtreets are regular, and the houſes ſo handſome, that they may be juſtly called palaces, being built of marble, and in an elegant taſte. The convents and churches are magnificent.

Feb. 2d we left Ferrara, and croſſed the Po, which is here half a mile broad. I obſerved many wooden mills upon it, raiſed on boats, which are tied to each other, and faſtened to ſtakes near the ſhore: we often ſaw three, four, or five together: the ſtream works them. At night we got to Rouvigo, having travelled only twenty-five miles, owing to deep and ſwampy roads. We here met with a clean houſe, and a very neat and obliging hoſteſs.

Feb.

Digitized by Google

Feb. 3d we were much troubled with miry, marſhy, overflowed roads. We reached Padua at night. The 4th we hired a boat for twenty-five ſhillings to carry us down the Brent to Venice. The boat is called a Centaur, has a very commodious large cabin, and is drawn by a horſe on the bank. We got to Venice at five o'clock in the evening, and went in maſques to the opera.

Feb. 5th waited on Mr. Murray the Engliſh Reſident, and Mr. Smith the Conſul. The next day we viewed the arſenal, which is three miles in circuit. Three thouſand artificers and labourers in the ſeveral naval branches, are conſtantly employed here. The expence amounts to about ſix thouſand ducats weekly. It is upon the whole a neat and compact dock-yard. The republick's fleet conſiſts of twenty-four ſhips of the firſt-rate, which carry eighty guns each, and twenty-five galleaſes. They are finiſhed to the upper deck, and lie under cover, and in the ſpace of two years, they could all be fitted for the ſea. The maſt-yard, rope-walk, &c. are upon the ſpot, all in exact order and ready at hand.

The famous Bucentaur galley, has two decks, and is really a fine ſight. The gilding alone coſt ſix thouſand pounds.

In the evening we went in maſques to the Ridotto, or public gaming-houſe. There are ſeveral apartments, with gaming-tables in each, loaded with either gold or ſilver. At each bank ſits a Venetian Senator unmaſked. To him the adventurer repairs, tries his fortune at Baſſet, and is very often ruined in a few minutes. There is ſomething diabolical in theſe ſcenes: the rooms are large, but dimly lighted: ſome people are gravely walking about, and others in deep play, and during the whole, all is ſilent, and not a whiſper is heard.

Digitized by Google

From hence we went to a grand feſtino or ball, given by a noble, upon his being elected Procurator. The feſtival laſts three days and three nights. Every apartment intended for company, is illuminated with wax candles, placed in ſilver branches, and has a band of muſic. The Engliſh Reſident, the French Ambaſſador, and the reſt of the foreign miniſters, and all the people of rank in Venice were at this feſtino: the whole was truly ſplendid.

Having got a paſſport, we embarked February 7th for Padua. The next day, by one o'clock, we got to Vicenza. In the evening we reached Verona. Early on the 9th we went to view the ruins of a Roman triumphal arch. After that, to Saint Bernard's church, with its beautiful rotunda chapel, deſigned by Miccheli. Next we viewed a brick bridge of three arches, built over the river Adige: the firſt meaſures one hundred and forty-two Italian feet at the baſe, the ſecond eighty-two, and the third ſeventy: it was built in 1354. The principal arch is reputed the wideſt in the world: the Rialto at Venice, making a ſpan only of eighty-ſix feet. The laſt thing we ſaw, was the Roman amphitheatre, the inſide of which is ſtill complete, but the outſide has ſuffered much.

At ten in the morning, we took horſes for Trent. The roads now begin to be ſtoney and hilly, and that beautiful country, which has been ſo diſtinguiſhable in our whole journey from Leghorn, is now putting on a different aſpect, though even here the vines hang like ſo many garlands from tree to tree. At eight in the evening we reached Borgetto, one of the many little towns ſeated on this road among the Alps. Here we got a clean room, and ſome wholeſome food.

Feb. 10th we left Borgetto, and at night got to Trent, a city, though not large, well built in a pleaſant plain. February 13th we reached Inſpruck the ca-

Digitized by Google

capital of Tirol. There is a noble caſtle or palace, formerly the reſidence of the Dukes of the houſe of Auſtria. The 15th we got to Augſburg, a large and handſome city. Here we were informed that there was no difficulty in going by Frankfort, though in the hands of the French, as our paſport would protect us. Here I muſt obſerve, that many times in this journey, we have experienced the good effects of the unparalelled ſucceſs attending the Britiſh arms.

The 16th we left Augſburg. On the 19th about Huntein, we ſaw two or three flocks of ſheep, a ſight new to us ſince we paſſed the Alps. The whole way has been hitherto full of foreſts of oak and fir. The ſides of the hills in this country are formed into terraces, and diſpoſed into vineyards, which is a piece of huſbandry we have not ſeen ſince we left Italy. The ſame day we got to Offenbourgh on the Maine: a large but old-faſhioned town. The country-houſes belonging to the nobility and gentry in the neighbourhood, are large and heavily built, they have generally domes, and four towers round them. In the way from hence to Aſchaffenbourgh, a well-fortified town belonging to the Elector of Mentz, the country is very pleaſant. On the lands adjacent are many flocks of ſheep, and various ſorts of wild-fowl ſwimming in the ſtream. Paſſing Aſchaffenburgh and Dettingen, we reached Hanau, likewiſe well fortified. The French have large garriſons in all theſe towns. The country around is well cultivated. In the evening we arrived at Franckfort, ſtrongly fortified. The ſtreets are remarkably wide, and the houſes handſomely built. By means of the navigable river, it carries on a great trade.

Feb. 21ſt we embarked in a boat for Mentz. The 23d we left Bingen on the Rhine. We paſſed by towns

towns and villages on both ſides the river. Vineyards are on the hills.

The 24th we got to Coblentz, a very large and populous city, pleaſantly ſituated at the junction of the Rhine and Moſelle. The next day we got to Bon: the Elector of Cologne's caſtle and gardens here are curious. The ſame day we reached Cologne. The 26th we left it, and drove over a fine champain country thence to Hochſtrat.

Feb. 27th we paſſed Rhineberg, the country about which is very pleaſant and well cultivated. Since we entered the Pruſſian territories, we have frequently met with direction-poſts on the road, which, though of great uſe to ſtrangers, are not to be ſeen in countries more to the ſouthward. From thence we went to Santen, where we had a view of a moſt beautiful vale, very broad and extenſive, with the river Rhine running through the midſt of it. Through all this country, the French have raiſed enormous contributions to the impoveriſhment of the inhabitants. Next we went through Cleves: the environs are very beautiful. Nimeguen, which we came to next, is large and ſtrongly fortified. I was here exceedingly ſtruck with the neatneſs and cleanlineſs of the houſes: it is ſubject to the States General. February 28th we embarked here in a boat for Rotterdam, for which we are to pay forty guilders.

March 1ſt we paſſed Loveſtein caſtle, and next day got to Rotterdam, the richeſt town of the united provinces next to Amſterdam, with clean regular ſtreets, and canals ſo cut, that the largeſt ſhips can come up to the merchants doors. Here we intended to have diſpoſed of our Italian chaiſes, which had coſt us near forty pounds each, but not being able to get more than about eight ſequins for them, we reſolved to have them conveyed to England.

Mar. 3d in the evening, we embarked in a ketch for Helvoetſluys, and arrived there next morning.

Digitized by Google

The 4th at eight in the morning, we embarked on board the packet-boat, and ſoon arrived at the long-wiſhed-for port of Harwich.

Thus after an irkſome abſence of five years, and a journey attended with a ſeries of difficulties, I once more got to my native ſhore.

A VOYAGE

Digitized by Google

A

VOYAGE

TO

SOUTH AMERICA,

UNDERTAKEN

By Command of the KING of SPAIN,

By Don GEORGE JUAN, and Don ANTONIO DE ULLOA, Captains of the SPANISH Navy, and Members of the ROYAL SOCIETIES of LONDON and BERLIN.

Tranſlated from the SPANISH.

IT is well known that philoſophers have imagined the figure of the earth to be perfectly ſpherical. Two oppoſite opinions have ariſen; both ſuppoſe it to be elliptical, but one thought its tranſverſe diameter was that of the poles, and the other that it was that of the equator. The ſolution of this problem, was the origin of our voyage: the expedition was undertaken by order of King Philip the Vth, and it was publiſhed by that of Ferdinand VI. The academy of ſciences at Paris repreſented to the King of France, that the way to aſcertain this point, was, to meaſure ſome degrees of the meridian near the equator; and Quito, in South America, was thought the propereſt for the purpoſe. Lewis XV. applied for this purpoſe to King Philip, who thought pro-

Digitized by Google

proper to appoint Don Juan, Knight of Malta, for the purpoſe, being well ſkilled in mathematics: and I, though much his inferior in this reſpect, was ordered for the ſame ſervice. The patents were dated Auguſt 1734, which contained orders to all Viceroys and Governors to aid and aſſiſt the deſign.

On the 26th of May 1735, we ſailed from Cadiz bay on board the Conquiſtador of ſixty-four guns, and the Incendio of fifty. June 3d, we ſaw the iſle of Teneriffe. The 4th had ſight of the iſlands of Palma. The 29th made Martinico. July 3d, were in ſight of Curaſao. The 5th we diſcovered the mountains of Saint Martha, famous for their height, being always covered with ſnow; and the 9th moored the ſhip in Carthagena bay, and landing, waited immediately on the Governor of the place: we were informed, that the academicians, ſent by order of the King of France to aſſiſt us, were not yet arrived. We waited for them at that place, and it was the 15th of November before they came. The next day we waited on them; they were Meſſieurs Godin, Bouguer, and De la Condamine, with attendants.

Determining to go to the equator as ſoon as poſſible, we fixed upon the route by Porto Bello, Panama, &c. But before we ſet out it will be proper to ſay a word or two concerning the city of Carthagena.

It ſtands in ten degrees twenty-five minutes forty-eight ſeconds and a half north latitude; and longitude from Paris, two hundred eighty-two degrees, twenty-eight minutes thirty-ſix ſeconds. It is ſituated on a ſandy iſland: the fortifications of both city and ſuburbs are raiſed in the modern ſtile, and lined with free-ſtone. The ſtreets are well laid out, broad, uniform, and well paved. The houſes generally of ſtone, but, from the duſky colour of the walls, the outſides make but a poor appearance. It is

equal

Digitized by Google

equal with the ſuburbs to a city of the third rank in Europe. It is populous, and is the ſee of a biſhop. The bay is one of the beſt in all America: it is deep, ſpacious, and perfectly ſecure; abounds with turtle and excellent fiſh, but is much infeſted with ſharks. The inhabitants of Carthagena may be divided into Europeans and blacks, with the Creole varieties that happen between them. In their cuſtoms, which differ from thoſe of Europe, I remarked particularly the free uſe of brandy, cacao, ſweetmeats, tobacco, &c. Even regular and ſober perſons never omit drinking a glaſs of brandy every morning to ſtrengthen the ſtomach; and chocolate is ſo common, that even the negroe-ſlaves regale with it after breakfaſt. Their women ſell it ready-made about the ſtreets at five farthings a diſh. Sweet-meats they eat here all day long; and ſmoaking is ſo univerſal that the women practiſe it.

The climate here is very hot: from obſervations made with Mr. Reaumur's thermometer, it appeared that the heat of the very hotteſt day at Paris is continual at Carthagena. From May, to the end of November, there is a continual ſucceſſion of tempeſt and rain; the latter ſo furious, that the ſtreets appear like rivers, and the country an ocean. From December to April the rains ceaſe, and the weather is agreeable. The badneſs of the climate is ſeen in the faces of the people, from their livid complexions: a ſtranger would ſuppoſe them all juſt recovered from ſome dreadful illneſs.

The country in the neighbourhood of Carthagena is ſo luxuriant, that the perpetual verdure of the woods and plants is admirable. The trees are large, lofty, and extremely various. Of the Acajou canoes are made; cedar they have in plenty, and from the Maria and balſam-trees, they get the Maria oil, and balſam of Tolu. The Manzanillo yields a beautiful apple which contains the moſt ſubtle poiſon;

Digitized by Google

ſon; even to ſleep under the ſhade of it is very dangerous. Common oil is the antidote to this poiſon. Palms they have of great ſize, and many ſorts.

Among the animals, the only tame eatable ones are the cow and the hog, which are in great plenty. The beef is indifferent, but the pork excellent. Poultry, pigeons, partridges, and geeſe are very good and in great plenty. Wild-geeſe are ſo very cheap, that I was amazed how they could be taken, till I was told, that to the eaſtward of the city was a large lake, to which vaſt numbers had recourſe: the perſons who take them throw into it fifty or twenty large calabaſhes, and the geeſe, uſed to their floating on the water, do not avoid them: after this the perſon returns to the lake with a hollow calabaſh, with holes for ſeeing and breathing; this he puts on his head and walks in the water with the calabaſh only above the ſurface; he then moves very ſlow towards the geeſe and pulls them down one by one, till having got as many as he can carry, he returns to his companions, and then renews his ſport as long as the geeſe ſtay.

Among the wild beaſts are tygers, which ſometimes make ſad havock among both cattle and men; leopards, foxes, and innumerable kinds of monkeys. The birds are exceedingly numerous, and many of them of the moſt beautiful plumage. Of the ſnakes, the moſt common, and at the ſame time the moſt poiſonous, are the corales, or coral-ſnakes, the rattle-ſnakes, and the willow-ſnakes: the firſt are four or five feet long, and an inch thick, are exceedingly beautiful, but the bite ſo deadly, that the perſon directly ſwells to ſuch a degree, that the blood guſhes out through all the organs of ſenſe, and even the coats of the veins at the extremities burſt, ſo that he ſoon dies. The rattle-ſnake ſeldom exceeds two feet and a half long. The willow-ſnake reſembles the rods of that tree, and as they often hang upon

upon it, they are not discovered without difficulty. The cientopes, or scolopendra, swarm at Carthagena, and are the more dangerous as they breed in houses more than in the fields: they are a yard long, have very hard scales, are nimble, and their bite, without immediate application, proves mortal. Scorpions are also numerous and dangerous. Musquetos are seen in clouds, and are among the plagues of the country.

European corn will not thrive in this country, but they have excellent maize and rice: a bushel of the first yields one hundred at harvest. They make their bread of it, and use it also for feeding their hogs and poultry. Plantations of sugar-canes abound greatly; their vegetation is such that they are cut twice a year. Cotton is also much cultivated. Cocoa-trees gow in great plenty, and the Carthagena chocolate is more esteemed than any other. The fruits of this country are the same with those of the hottest climates: among them the pine-apple is the principal; and limes and tamarinds they have in great quantities. The great plenty of flesh, fowl, and fruits, enable the inhabitants of Carthagena to spread their tables with great profusion. In the houses of persons of distinction they are served with decency, and even splendor. They make two meals and a light repast every day.

The trade of Carthegena is of no great account, except for the short time that the galleons are in the bay; but then every thing is alive, and the city and neighbourhood is one continued fair.

As soon as the French frigate, which had brought the academicians, had watered and was ready for sailing, we embarked on board her November the 24th, 1735, and the 29th anchored at Porto Bello, situated according to observation nine degrees thirty-four minutes, and thirty-five seconds north latitude, and two hundred and seventy degrees fifty minutes longitude from

Digitized by Google

from Paris. The town ſtands near the ſea on the declivity of a mountain; it conſiſts of one principal ſtreet, with a few inferior; the houſes are chiefly built of wood. The harbour is an exceeding fine one, being perfectly commodious for all ſorts of ſhips. The climate of the place is, however, as bad as the harbour is good. It is uncommonly fatal to Europeans, and the natives themſelves feel the ill effects of it. It is owing much to the exceſſive heat, cauſed by the high mountains that prevent the breezes: the rains here are frequent, and come down in torrents, accompanied by the moſt dreadful thunder and lightning. Galleons and European ſhips rarely come here without loſing half, or a third of their men.

Proviſions are dear, eſpecially when the galleons are here. Fiſh, however, is plentiful, and they have conſiderable ſugar-plantations; but the woods come ſo cloſe to the town, that the tygers patrole even the ſtreets in the night, and carry off whatever they meet with. Serpents are as numerous and deadly as at Carthagena; and toads ſwarm in ſuch a manner, that the ſtreets, courts, and all open places are full of them: ſome are ſix inches long. When it has rained in the night the ſtreets are paved with them, ſo that you cannot ſtep without treading on them, and they bite ſeverely.

The town is very thinly inhabited in general; but when the galleons arrive it is one of the moſt populous places in all South America. Its fair is the center of commerce between Spain and Peru. As ſoon as it is known at Carthagena that the Peru fleet has unloaded at Panama, the galleons depart for Porto Bello: then the concourſe of people is ſo great that rents become exceſſive: a middling chamber, with a cloſet, lets for one thouſand crowns for the fair, and ſome houſes up to ſix thouſand crowns. While the crews of the ſhips are unloading them,

the

Digitized by Google

the country is ſpread with mules from Panama in droves of one hundred, loaded with cheſts of gold and ſilver on account of the merchants of Peru. The fair by royal edict cannot laſt more than forty days.

Dec. 22d, we left Porto Bello, having put our inſtruments and baggage on board ſome veſſels on the river Chagre, ſent for that purpoſe by the Preſident of Panama. It was the 27th before we arrived at Cruces, the landing-place, about five leagues from Panama. The river Chagre is principally navigated with barks; one ſort of which is formed out of a ſingle piece of timber; and it is ſurpriſing to think that there be trees of ſuch a prodigious magnitude as are uſed for this purpoſe; ſome of them are eleven Paris feet broad, and carry four or five hundred quintals very conveniently; and require, beſides the pilot, eighteen or twenty robuſt negroes to navigate them.

The beauty of the proſpects which the rivers in this country exhibit is very great. The ſize of the trees and the magnificence of the foreſts, with the vaſt variety of wild animals that inhabit them, are all ſtriking. The fruits are equal in variety, and the pine apples excell thoſe of all other countries. From Cruces we ſet out the 29th for Panama, and got there in the evening.

That city is built on the iſthmus of the ſame name. The latitude we found by obſervation to be eighty degrees fifty-ſeven minutes forty-eight ſeconds and a half north. The houſes are in general of wood, and have only one ſtory; a few are of ſtone: the ſtreets are large, broad, and for the moſt part paved. It has a cathedral, and has a biſhop, with many prebendaries. The people of this city neglect agriculture ſo much, giving their attention to trade, that there is no plenty of the vegetables common in ſimilar climates. The ſoil is left waſte even cloſe to

the

Digitized by Google

the city, and does not appear to have ever been cultivated. The inhabitants are, however, plentifully ſupplied with the beſt wheat, maize, poultry, and cattle, but they are brought from Peru, &c. The climate here is more healthy than that of Carthagena and Porto Bello, for the people are not ſo meagre and pale. The common food is an amphibious animal called *Ignana*, about a yard long, nearly reſembling an alligator; this they reckon a great delicacy, but to me it was very nauſeous.

There is a very briſk trade at Panama from its ſituation, which makes it the general road of all ſtrangers, and alſo commerce from Porto Bello, &c. and Peru. They have alſo a pretty conſiderable coaſting-trade on the South Sea; and a valuable pearl-fiſhery in the gulph. Beſides theſe advantages the city is not only the capital of its province, but alſo of the whole kingdom of Terra Firma.

Feb. 22, 1736, we left Panama, and going on board a ſhip bound for Guayaquil, we put into Saint Mathew's bay for wood and water, and as we ſhould have to ſtay probably ſome time at Guayaquil, Meſſieurs Condamine and Bouguer ſtaid here ſome time to make obſervations, and we got to that city the 25th.

Guayaquil is of conſiderable extent, being half a league long. The houſes are built of wood, yet are large and handſome. The ground both of the city and the ſavannahs around it, is a ſpungy chalk, and every where ſo level that no rain can get off, ſo that the whole is an impaſſable ſlough. The commerce of the place renders it populous. The climate, though it is equal in heat to that of Panama and Carthagena, is, if we may judge by the complexions of the inhabitants, more healthy than either. The women are remarkably fair and handſome. The winter ſets in in December, and laſts till April or May. Through that period the elements,

Digitized by Google

ments, the insects, and vermin are all very disagreeable. The heat is exceedingly great, even hotter than at Carthagena. The rains last day and night; and the thunder and lightning are dreadful: the whole country is under water, and the insects are so innumerable that no candle can burn five minutes, but in a lanthorn. You cannot be near a light without having your eyes, ears, and nostrils full of them. All sorts of snakes and reptiles also swarm, and rats in amazing numbers add to the plagues of the country. In summer, however, all these disagreeable circumstances are much abated; the sky is generally serene and bright, the gentlest showers are rarely known, and the salubrity of the air is very great.

They use here different sorts of plants by way of bread; the most common is unripe plantanes cut in slices and roasted. Most other provisions, except beef, fruits, and roots, are imported from the Cordilleras, or from Peru. The coast abounds with excellent fish, among which are very fine lobsters and excellent oysters.

The jurisdiction of Guayaquil is in length, from north to south, about sixty leagues, and broad, from east to west, forty or forty-five. It is divided into several lieutenancies. In that of Puerto Viejo, they plant some tobacco, but it is not much esteemed, and the rest of its products are scarcely enough for the people, though few; but there is a general poverty reigns through all this district.

Punta de Santa Elena is noted for the great quantity of salt made, so that it supplies the whole province of Quito. On the coast is also found the shell-fish, which yields the purple dye so famous among the ancients. Machala and Manaranjol produce great quantities of cocoa. Upon the coast are large tracts of low ground, overrun with mangroves, a tree that will only grow in a soil daily over-

Digitized by Google

overflowed by the sea, and left slimy. It no sooner appears above ground than it divides itself into very knotty and distorted branches, and from each knot others issue in such numbers as soon to form an impenetrable thicket. The usual height of the principal stems is eighteen or twenty yards, and ten or twelve inches in diameter. The wood is so solid, that it sinks in water, and when used in ships is very durable, not subject either to split or rot.

The jurisdiction of Babahoyo abounds in such numbers of cocoa-plantations, that many are left to nature, and the fruit devoured by the monkeys, and other animals. There are also in this country great droves of cattle and horses, which are kept in the rainy-season in the mountains, but as soon as the lands are dry are brought back again to the low grounds to fatten on the gamalotes, a plant which grows so luxuriantly as entirely to cover the ground; it is two yards and a half high, and grows so thick as to preclude all passage.

Baba abounds very greatly in cocoa-trees, a plant which delights so excessively in water, that the ground where they are planted must be watered so as to be mire, or they will die. They must also grow under the shade of other trees.

Upon the river Guayaquil, there is a singular sort of vessels used, called Balzas; sometimes short voyages at sea are made with them; some are for fishing, others for goods, and others for the removal of families from the town to their country estates: they are usually made of nine beams, and are twenty to twenty-four Paris feet wide, the largest carry four or five hundred quintals. They sail, tack, and work, as well in contrary winds, as ships with a keel. It does this instead of a rudder, with some boards three or four yards in length, placed vertically both in the head and stern.

The

Digitized by Google

The fiſh in the river Guayaquil would be much more numerous, were it not for the immenſe number of alligators, both in the river and the adjacent plains; they are ſometimes ſeen of five yards long; they would be more numerous, were it not for the gallinazos, who devour their eggs. When the alligators cannot get fiſh enough to ſatisfy their hunger, they take to the meadows in the night, and ſeize calves and colts while they are aſleep; children alſo, if they happen to be out after dark, are alſo eat up. Boatmen alſo, if they happen to ſleep with their arm or leg over the ſide of the boat have been ſeized, and the whole body drawn under water.

In the commerce of Guayaquil, the principle articles are the export of cacao to Panama and New Spain. Timber they ſend in large quantities to Callao. Salt is another great article, which is ſent all over the province of Quito. There is a conſiderable trade in horned cattle, horſes, and mules, of which great numbers are bred in the extenſive ſavannahs of this country; they go chiefly to the mountainous provinces. Beſides theſe they export tobacco, wax, guinea-pepper, drugs: the imports are, from Peru wine, brandy, oil, and dried fruits. From Quito, bays, flour, pepper, bacon, hams, cheeſe. From Panama, European goods. From New Spain, iron.

We embarked at Guayaquil the 3d of May on board a large chata; the 11th we got to Caracol, having a terrible paſſage on the river from the innumerable muſquetoes. The mules being arrived at Caracol, we ſet out on the 14th; we thence travelled four leagues through ſavannahs and woods of plantanes and cacaos to the river Ojibar, which we followed on the banks, and forded ſeveral times. In the evening we halted at a place called Puerto de Muſquetos, which has not its name for nothing. They were ſo tormenting, that ſome of the company

Digitized by Google

pany ſtripped themſelves, and went into the river up to their necks, but their heads were ſo attacked by them, that they were forced to come out again. Our muſqueto-nets were of no ſervice, the numbers were ſo great. The 15th we continued our journey through a thick foreſt, which brought us again to the ſame river, where it formed one of the moſt beautiful caſcades in the world.

At Tarigagua on the 17th we found the weather cooler than it had been, from the natural aſcent of country. It is curious to remark the difference of feelings of perſons when they meet in this road. Thoſe who are coming from Guayaquil, from the coolneſs they feel, wrap themſelves up in their cloaths; the others from the mountains, find the heat ſo great, that they can ſcarce bear any cloaths. The one delighted with the warmth of the river, bathes in it; the other diſlikes even being ſpattered with it. In the morning we began to aſcend the mountain San Antonia; but the ruggedneſs of the road is not eaſily conceived; the paths are narrow, full of holes for the mules to tread in, and all the way on the edge of a dreadful precipice. One falſe ſtep is certain deſtruction, and to walk is equally dangerous, beſides the fatigue. The deſcent from theſe heights, is not leſs terrible: the mules are ſenſible of the caution requiſite, for, coming on the top of an eminence, they ſtop, and placing their feet cloſe together, as if going to lie down, they take a ſurvey of the road, and ſlide down with inconceivable ſwiftneſs. The rider muſt keep himſelf faſt in his ſaddle: if he checks his mule, they both unavoidably periſh. The addreſs of the animals is wonderful, for they follow all the windings of the road as if they had ſettled in their minds the track they would purſue. They are themſelves ſenſible of the danger, and ſnuff and ſnort, and tremble ſometimes, before they determine to take

Digitized by Google

the ſlide. The Indians go before, and hanging on the ſides of the mountain, animate the beaſts by their ſhouts till they ſtart down. Mules that have much experience and addreſs in theſe expeditions, are highly valued. To add to the natural badneſs of theſe roads, neither the government nor individuals take any heed to the removal of obſtacles. Great trees ſometimes fall acroſs the road, which are ſuffered to remain till they rot, to the great miſchief to trade and communication.

The 18th we began to deſcend towards the province of Chimbo, the whole country within the reach of the eye, being an open level plain, with neither trees nor mountains, and cultivated with wheat, barley, maize, and other grain, whoſe verdure was exceedingly agreeable. The 21ſt we were entertained at Guaranda, by the Corregidor; and the next day continued our journey, beginning to croſs the deſert of Chimborazo, which is ſandy, and ſurrounded by mountains covered with ſnow. The next day we came to the ruins of an ancient palace of the Yncas, in a valley between two mountains; but they conſiſted only of ſome foundations. From hence we croſſed large plains, and arrived the 29th at the city of Quito, where, for ſeveral days, we were entertained with great ſplendor, by the principal people of the place.

It had now taken us up a year to get to Quito, which was to be the ſcene of our operations. For ſome days after our arrival, we were taken up with returning the civilities we had received, and then began to deliberate on the ways of performing our work, Monſieurs de Bouguer and de la Condamine being arrived. We firſt meaſured a piece of ground, which was to be the baſe of our obſervations, but this proved a very difficult work: this plain is four leagues north-eaſt of the city of Quito. Our daily labour was to meaſure the length of this plain,

Digitized by Google

and at the ſame time, by a level, to correct the inequalities of the ſurface. We began early every morning, and continued cloſe at it till the evening; but when the weather was either very bad, or the ſun exceedingly hot, we retired to a tent pitched for that purpoſe. Beſides meaſuring this baſe, we had angles to obſerve, both horizontal and vertical, of the firſt triangles to be obſerved; for this purpoſe M. de Verguin, with others, were ſent to take a map of the ſouthern parts of the province, whilſt M Bouguer did the ſame in the north of it: this was neceſſary for placing ſignals, in order to form regular triangles. M. de la Condamine at the ſame time went to Lima, in order to get money for the party on letters of recommendation, till a ſupply came.

All theſe ſeveral matters were finiſhed about the middle of June; and it being then determined to continue the triangles to the ſouth of Quito, M. Bouguer, de la Condamine and myſelf, with our aſſiſtants, climbed to the higheſt ſummit of the mountain Pichincha: there we ſuffered greatly from the ſeverity of the cold, and the fury of the winds. Indeed our greateſt evil was the exceſſive cold we felt in the torrid zone, and almoſt under the equator. A field-tent was pitched for each company; but on the top of our mountain, from the narrowneſs of the ſummit, this could not be done, and we were forced to content ourſelves with a hut ſo ſmall, that we could all ſcarce creep into it, and this hut was ſoon covered with ice and ſnow. Yet, bad as this habitation was, we were forced generally to keep within it, both from the exceſs of the cold and the thickneſs of the fog: when the fog cleared up, the clouds rolled beneath us like a ſea, and our rock like an iſland in it; and when this was the caſe, the tempeſts broke far beneath us upon the plains of Quito. At the ſame time that this was the ſcene

Digitized by Google

beneath us, we enjoyed a pleaſing ſunſhine, and a delightful ſerenity: but whenever we quitted our cottage, we took care not to go far, ſo as to be always ready to regain it. The door was faſtened with thongs of leather, and great care had been taken to leave no crevices open, beſides the whole being well covered with ſtraw; but notwithſtanding this, the wind would penetrate: and though the hut was full, with lamps burning, and each a chafing-diſh of coals, yet we ſuffered much from the cold. Add to all this, when it ſnowed, we were obliged to ſally out with ſhovels to remove the ſnow from the hut; and our ſervants and Indians, who had a hut with a conſtant fire, were ſo benumbed with cold, that they could only take their turn in this labour. Our feet were ſwelled, and ſo tender we could ſcarce walk. Our hands were covered with chilblains; our lips ſo chopped, that to ſpeak put us to torture. Our food was boiled rice, and ſome fleſh and fowls; and inſtead of water, we had ice. We tried ſtrong liquors, but the effect was no more than water, and we then left them off. In this ſituation we had ſpent but four days, when four out of five of our Indians deſerted us; and the Corregidor ſending us others, they alſo did the ſame: upon this, he ſent four under an Alcalde, with orders that they ſhould be relieved every four days. In this manner we ſpent twenty-three days on this rock to the 6th of September, and yet we could not finiſh our obſervations of the angles: for when it was clear weather with us, it was cloudy with the other mountains, where the ſignals were alſo to be ſeen and made. It was therefore neceſſary to erect our ſignals lower, but our habitation was not changed till the beginning of December.

The ſeries of triangles in the ſouth part being finiſhed, we began our aſtronomical obſervations; but our inſtrument not being exactly adapted to the work,

work, we returned to Quito in December, in order to conſtruct another, and that employed us till Auguſt of the year following, 1740. Upon this buſineſs we were employed for ſeveral years, ſo that it was not entirely finiſhed till May 1744.

Meſſieurs Bouguer and de la Condamine having concluded, at that period, their part of the obſervations, left Quito in order to return to France, the former by Carthagena, and the latter by the river Amazon: but before I proceed in the return of the party, I ſhall ſay ſomething of the ſcene of the obſervations.

The city of Quito, we found, by obſervations, was ſituated in thirteen minutes thirty three ſeconds ſouth latitude, and two hundred and ninety-eight degrees fifteen minutes forty-five ſeconds longitude from Teneriffe. It ſtands on the eaſtern ſkirts of the weſt Cordillera of the Andes, thirty-five leagues from the South Sea. In ſize it would rank with thoſe of the ſecond claſs in Europe; but the extreme unevenneſs of the ground whereon it is built, is a diſadvantage to its appearance. It is nearly ſurrounded by two ſpacious and beautiful plains, ſpread with ſeats and cultivation, covered with an agreeable verdure, and enamelled with flowers from a climate which is a perpetual ſpring. Many cattle feed on the eminences; the ſoil is ſo rich, that they cannot conſume the herbage.

The principal ſquare is ſurrounded by the cathedral, the Biſhop's palace, the town-houſe, and the palace of the audience; the latter, however, is almoſt in ruins. The four ſtreets, which enter at the angles, are ſtrait and handſome; all the reſt are crooked and very unequal: but there are ſeveral ſpacious ſquares, beſides the principal one; in theſe are many convents. That of the Franciſcans would rank high among the moſt beautiful buildings in Europe. The prin-

Digitized by Google

cipal houſes in Quito are ſpacious and well contrived, but all conſiſt of a ſingle ſtory, with a balcony towards the ſtreet. The materials for building are unburnt brick, with a ſpecies of mortar uncommonly hard, which was much uſed by the Indians.

The revenue of the Biſhop is twenty-four thouſand dollars; that of the Dean, two thouſand five hundred; four Dignitaries, two thouſand each; the Cannons, fifteen hundred each; the Prebends, ſix hundred; and the Demi-prebends, four hundred and twenty.

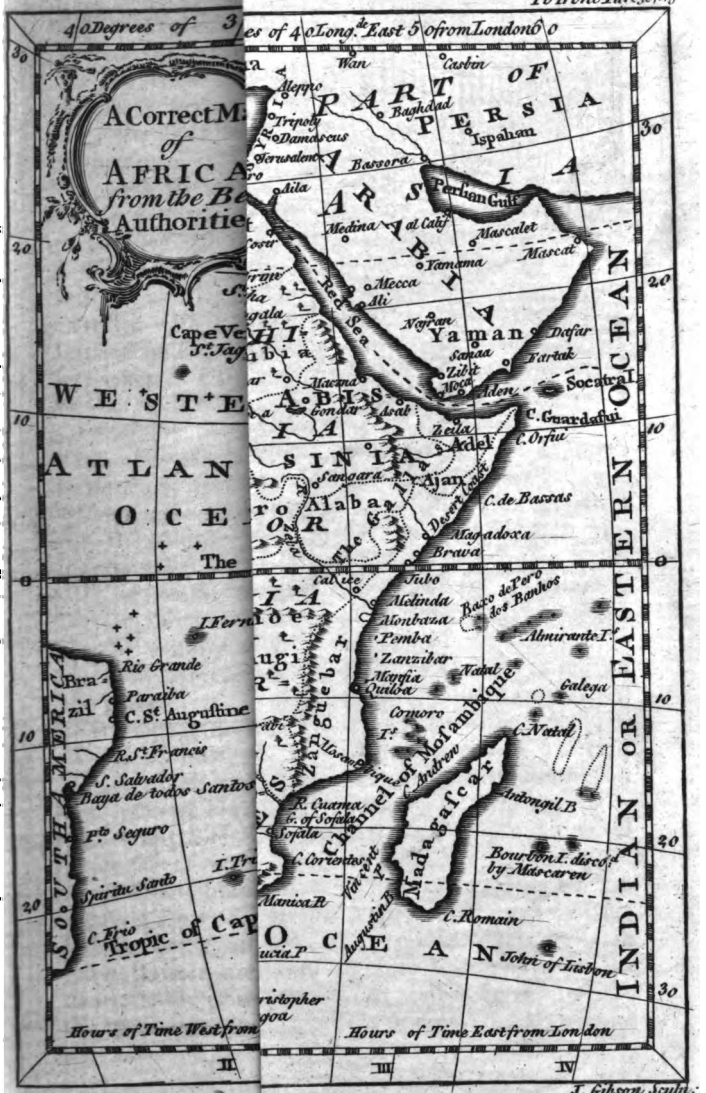
The city is very populous, conſiſting of whites, Meſtizos, Indians, and negroes, to the amount of between fifty and ſixty thouſand ſouls. And in ſo conſiderable a number, perhaps, there is no city in the old world, that, in proportion to the number, contains ſo much idleneſs, indolence, and want of induſtry of all kinds. Drinking rum, and ſipping Paraguay tea, with viſiting, gaming, intemperance, and debauchery, are the principal callings of the inhabitants. Being an inland town there is little commerce, yet what they have is regular. The principal families ſubſiſt upon the products of their landed eſtates. In a word, Quito, though not near ſo rich as other cities in theſe parts of the world, is not remarkable for poverty.

Nothing can exceed the happy mildneſs and temperature of the air of Quito, which, from theory, might not be imagined from its ſituation in the center of the torrid zone. Parts of the country may be ſaid to enjoy a perpetual ſpring. Indeed, nature has ſcattered her bleſſings here with ſo liberal a hand, that its ſuperior can ſcarcely be found. This is principally owing to the elevation of the country in general: though the variations are ſo great, from low vallies to the tops of high mountains, that all climates from great heat to ice and ſnow are here to be found. The equality of the climate is one of its

moſt

Digitized by Google

To front. Pa. 250. V. 5



Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

moſt valuable qualities: it is the ſame throughout the year. Reaumur's thermometer is uſually about one thouſand and eleven. The difference of the ſeaſons is ſcarce perceptible. The mornings are cool, the days warm, and the nights of a pleaſing temperature. The winds are continual, never violent, but always healthy. Were it not, therefore, for ſome other circumſtances, Quito would be the paradiſe of the earth.

Theſe circumſtances are bad enough: tempeſts of thunder and lightning, amazing to Europeans, and attended with ſuch torrents of rain, that the ſtreets, ſituated on ſlopes, appear like rivers, and the ſquares like lakes. To this are to be added frequent earthquakes.

To ſome unuſual quality of the air, it may, perhaps, be aſcribed that they are totally free from muſquetos, and other ſimilar inſects. Even a flea is ſeldom to be ſeen, which is not owing to cleanlineſs, for the people are ſo dirty, that the ſtreets and ſquares are full of ordure till the rains clean them.

The canine madneſs is never known in Peru: the inhabitants appear aſtoniſhed when you relate the melancholy effects of it in Europe. All America, in general, has hitherto alſo been free from the plague.

In reſpect to the conſtant beauty and pleaſantneſs of the country, Quito has ſcarcely a rival in the world. The air is ſo equal throughout the year, that here are hardly any of the appearances of winter: and the fertility of it is ſo great, that, if this happineſs of the climate was not conſidered, it would appear incredible. To an European, it is a moſt pleaſing ſight to ſee ſome of the herbs of the field fading, while others are ſpringing up; and whilſt ſome flowers are going off, others are blowing, to continue the enameled ſcenery. When the fruits of the trees are ripe, and the leaves changing their co-

Digitized by Google

lour, fresh fruit and leaves are appearing on the same tree.

The farmers crops exhibit the same appearance, reaping and sowing going on at the same time throughout the year: some are just coming up, others in the blade, and some blossoming; so that the slope of the same hill exhibits every season of the year. This uncommon fertility of the soil brings a great plenty of fruit and corn of every kind. All sorts of butchers meat is excellent, and so cheap that a quarter of a hundred is sold for only four rials; a fat sheep for five or six rials. Wheat is plentiful. The only thing scarce is pulse; but the want of it is made up by roots, such as camates, arnchachas, yncas, ocas and papas. Here are also plantanes, guincos, Guinea pepper, chirimogas, aguacates, granadillas, pines, and guayabas. In the colder parts are peaches, nectarines, apricots, melons and water-melons. Parts that can be called neither hot nor cold, produce frutillas, or Peru strawberries, and apples. China and Seville oranges, citrons, lemons, and limes, are in great plenty the whole year: they abound on all tables, and are eaten alternately with other food. Of all these fruits the chirimoy is the most delicious that is known in either Europe or India. The tree every year sheds and renews its leaves. The blossom is not beautiful but incomparably fragant, so that though the number of blossoms is small, the ladies buy them for nosegays at any rate.

Papas are another word for potatoes: they are a favourite food here, the Creoles preferring them to any kind of meat, or even fowl; and it is the chief dependance of poor people.

As to corn, the sorts in general are the same as those of Spain. The maize and barley are used by the lower classes, and the Indians make bread of them. They have one sort of grain peculiar to this country:

it

Digitized by Google

it reſembles a lentil, but is white and ſmaller. It is an annual plant, ſown and reaped every year; it grows four feet high.

Beſides domeſtic quadrupeds, there are great numbers of rabbits caught on the deſerts. Partridges are not plentiful, and more like European quails. Cheeſe is a great article in the food of Quito: the conſumption amounts annually to ſeven or eight thouſand dollars: the neighbourhood of the city abounds alſo in excellent butter; and ſugar and honey is uſed in immenſe quantities from the great conſumption of ſweetmeats.

The manufactures of the province of Quito are only cottons, and ſome bays and cloths, which are ſold at Lima for the uſe of the inward provinces of Peru. The returns are made in bullion, fringes, wine, brandy, oil, copper, tin, lead, and quick-ſilver. They import indigo from New Spain, of which the manufactures conſume large quantities, blue being a colour pretty general. Iron and ſteel they have from Europe by way of Guayaquil.

The greateſt breadth of Quito is, from north to ſouth, two hundred leagues; and the length, eaſt to weſt, ſix hundred leagues; but theſe limits include conſiderable tracts inhabited by ſavage Indians, and little known by the Spaniards. There are in it nine juriſdictions.

I. SAN MIGUEL DE IBARRA.] The town of the ſame name contains ten or twelve thouſand ſouls. The air is very mild, but varies according to the ſituation. Moſt of the farms in the vallies have plantations of ſugar-canes, and mills for extracting the juice, by which means they make large quantities of ſugar which is very white. In this climate the canes are in perfection all the year, by which means the mills are kept conſtantly at work. Farms, ſituated in places where the heat is leſs, produce maize, wheat, barley, &c. and bring up many

Digitized by Google

goats, but few sheep. In one of the districts are a great many wild-asses, which increase very fast, and are not easily caught. Those who want to catch them have recourse to the owners of the grounds, and agree with them for so many days hunting: they then beat the woods, and drive the asses into some valley, when they catch them at full-speed by throwing a noose over them; but if one ass forces his way out, the whole herd follows with the greatest impetuosity. These asses are very valuable, for they are as swift as horses, and regard not any declivities.

II. Otabalo.] The lands in this juridiction are laid out in plantations like the former, but there are not so many sugar-mills in it. It abounds, however, with manufactures: the Indians, living in the villages, are very numerous, and are great weavers: they make cottons, carpets, pavilions for beds, quilts, &c. Their method of sowing wheat and barley is here different from the former jurisdiction; for instead of sowing the seeds broadcast, they mark the land into furrows, and along the sides of them they make holes a foot asunder, putting five or six grains into each: the great increase, which is usually above one hundred fold, pays them well for this labour. Here are many studs of horses, and multitudes of black cattle, from which large quantities of butter and cheese are made, and there are besides large flocks of sheep.

III. Quito.] This juridiction has its lands quite covered with plantations in all situations from the low vallies to the tops of the mountains, and yielding an equal variety of products. The temperate plains yield maize in great plenty. The deep vallies are planted with sugar-canes, from whence they extract a great quantity of sugar and rum; yet do not the canes ripen fast, for they are three years old before they are cut. The plantations upon the mountains

Digitized by Google

mountains produce wheat, barley, potherbs, and potatoes: and above theſe are fed numerous flocks, which yield a plenty of wool that affords employment to multitudes of people.

IV. ASSIENTO LATACUNGA.] The villages in this juriſdiction are in general larger and more populous than in the others. The country, about the capital, is ſowed with clover, and interſperſed with plantations of willows.

V. RIOBAMBA.] Here are many plantations, ſome of them very conſiderable, and abounds in very conſiderable manufactories of wool, which the numerous flocks produce. The ſoil is very fertile, yielding abundance of grain and pulſe; and in the cultivated parts, nothing can exceed the variety and agreeableneſs of the proſpects. The warm ſituations yield ſugar that is remarkably good; and in other parts, the temperature of the climate is ſo great, that they yield more European fruits than any other juriſdiction.

VI. CHIMBO.] Which province carries on all the trade of Quito with Guayaquil, by means of prodigious droves of mules.

VII. GUAYAQUIL.] Deſcribed before.

VIII. CUENÇA.] The city of the ſame name lies in ſouth latitude two degrees, fifty-three minutes and forty-nine ſeconds, ſituated in a very ſpacious plain. The ſtreets are ſtrait and broad. From the admirable ſituation of this place, and the fertility of the neighbourhood, it might be made the paradiſe, not only of Quito, but of all Peru. It contains twenty to thirty thouſand inhabitants, that rank among the moſt indolent of all Quito; but the women are very induſtrious. Nothing can exceed the mildneſs of the climate. The country is beautifully ſcattered with farm-houſes, and plantations of ſugar-canes: ſome parts yield corn, and others are applied to feeding ſheep and horned cattle, from which

Digitized by Google

which great quantities of very fine cheese are made. The number of mines in this jurisdiction are extraordinarily great, and some of them very rich.

IX. LOJA.] In this jurisdiction is produced the famous quinquina, or jesuit's bark, of which there are several kinds, but one superior to the rest. The tree is not of the largest size, the height not exceeding two toises and an half. There are here large and thick forests of this tree; but yet they decrease very much, those growing up spontaneously not equalling the number cut down by the Indians. In the jurisdiction of Cuença, they have also discovered lately large forests of this tree, which till then the inhabitants were entirely ignorant of, though their neighbours had been so long enriched by it. This country has also been very attentive to cochineal, which it produces, of goodness equal to that of Oaxaca in New Spain; but though they might increase it to almost any quantity, yet do they confine themselves to what is wanted by the dyers of Cuença.

The insect known by the name of cochineal, is bred on the Indian fig-tree, which they plant by making rows of holes half a yard deep, and two yards distant from each other. In each hole is placed one or two leaves of the tree: this soon shoots up a stem, and the plant seldom exceeds the height of three yards: its blossom is small, of a bright red, and in the shape of a bud. The ground where they are planted must be carefully attended to, particularly in being kept free from weeds; and after the cochineal is gathered, the leaves are plucked off, that a fresh crop of them may shoot, as the insect is much best of young leaves and plants.

The cochineal was formerly imagined to be a fruit or seed of some particular plant; but it is now very well known to be an insect, which breeds and feeds upon the opuntia or fig-tree, as the silk-worm does on the

the mulberry. They are bred and nouriſhed on the opuntia, where their eggs are placed among the leaves. In May or June, when the plant is in full perfection, the eggs are depoſited; and in the ſpace of two months, the animal arrives at its full growth, which is the ſize of a ſmall pea. In its infant ſtate, however, it is expoſed to many injuries; the violence of the north winds blow away the eggs from the leaves. Showers, fogs, and froſts alſo damage the leaves: when this is the caſe, the planter makes fires to fill the air with ſmoke, which is found an antidote to the inclemency of the weather. Birds are alſo a great enemy, for they are very fond of the inſect, and the ſame danger is to be apprehended from worms, ſo that all ſorts of vermin muſt be kept away. When the inſects are full grown, they are gathered and put in earthen-ware pots; after which they are killed and put in bags: they muſt be killed by heat, either by hot water, or in an oven, or by the ſun; and there is much attention requiſite in this operation, as the fineneſs of the colour depends on it. It is obſervable, that the inſect does not, to appearance, injure the plant it feeds on, but takes the nouriſhment from the moſt ſucculent juice, which it takes in, by means of its proboſcis, through the fine teguments of the leaves. As to the climate, which moſt agrees with this branch of cultivation, it is not exactly to be aſcertained, for it is carried on in various; but the moſt proper, is the temperate and dry, for there the opuntia thrives beſt. To me it appears, that Andaluſia, in old Spain, is extremely well ſituated for breeding cochineal, both from the temperature of the air, and the ſoil being natural to one ſpecies of the prickly fig-trees: nor are there froſts, fogs, and ſnows to be apprehended.

Beſides the diviſion of Quito into the preceding juriſdictions, there is another diviſion to be noticed, into government. That of Popayan, has a capital

of

Digitized by Google

of the ſame name, which is one of the moſt ancient in Peru. It ſtands in a large plain, in latitude two degrees twenty-eight minutes north. It is of a middling ſize, with broad, ſtrait, and level ſtreets. The houſes are built of unburnt bricks, as at Quito, and of the ſame conſtruction. The apartments are large and convenient, and magnificently furniſhed in many, at a great expence, for it all comes from Europe, and beſides the long voyage, comes a prodigious journey by land.

The inhabitants are reckoned to amount to between twenty and twenty-five thouſand, and they are conſtantly increaſing, which is owing to the number of gold-mines worked all over the government. The temperature of the climate reſembles that already deſcribed, varying with the height or lowneſs of the country. About the capital, it is a continual ſpring. The fertility of the ſoil is very exuberant, the farms breed great numbers of horned cattle and ſheep. Storms, tempeſts, and earthquakes, are, however, very common here, which perhaps may be owing to this juriſdiction abounding more with mines than any other in Quito.

In ſome of the valleys of this country is found an inſect remarkable for the ſubtilty of its poiſon: it is called coya or coyba: its colour is of a fiery red, ſhaped like a ſpider, but much leſs than a bug. The venom is ſo powerful, that on ſqueezing the inſect, if a drop falls on the ſkin of man or beaſt, it immediately penetrates into the fleſh, and cauſes large tumours, which end in death: the only remedy known, is to make a fire of ſtraw or long graſs, and as ſoon as the tumours appear, ſinge the patient's whole body in the flame. If an Indian feels an inſect crawling on his neck, he calls to his companion to ſee if it is a coya, without lifting his hand to touch or ſcratch, the other then blows it away. Cattle, before they bite the graſs, blow ſtrongly

Digitized by Google

ſtrongly upon it, leſt there ſhould be any; yet a mule ſometimes takes one in, and after ſwelling frightfully, expires preſently.

In the plains of Popayan is found the plant cuca or coca, ſo much valued by the Indians, that they had rather go without bread, meat, or any other food. The ſtem is weak, and it twines round ſomething elſe for ſupport. The leaf, the Indians are perpetually chewing, as tobacco is in Europe; and find it ſo nutritive, that they can work whole days together upon no other nouriſhment: it preſerves their teeth ſound, and fortifies the ſtomach. It is exactly the ſame, as the betel of the Eaſt Indies.

There is as much trade carried on in Popayan, as in any province of Quito, and the capital being the center of it, the moſt wealthy perſons in the juriſdiction are here, five or ſix of its merchants are reckoned worth one hundred thouſand dollars each; and twenty others worth from forty to eighty thouſand, beſides very many of ſmaller fortunes, yet in good circumſtances; and this excluſive of farms and mines with which the country abounds.

Weſt of the Andes is the government of Atacames, which had been ſo long neglected by the Spaniards, that it was 1741, before it was tolerably eſtabliſhed. The towns are conſequently yet but poor and ſmall, and cultivation has made no great progreſs yet in the country. The climate reſembles that of Guayaquil, and produces much the ſame vegetables, but being higher, and not ſubject to ſuch inundations, its plantations of cacao are much better. In it are alſo produced much vanillas, achote, ſarſaparilla, and indigo, large quantities of wax are alſo gained, and its foreſts are full of trees of a ſurprizing height and ſize.

The government of Quixos and Macas on the eaſt ſide of the Cordillera of the Andes, forming thoſe

Digitized by Google

thoſe two diviſions. The climate of Quixos is very hot and moiſt, and the rains almoſt continual; the whole country is almoſt covered with thick woods. In theſe are found many cinnamon-trees, great quantities of which are cut for the uſe of Quito, &c. the quality of it does not come up to that of the Eaſt Indies, but nearly reſembles it. The ſmell, circumferance, and thickneſs are the ſame, but in the taſte it is more pungent. The leaf is alſo the ſame, and the flower and ſeed, exceed even thoſe of India. In all probability cultivation would improve it to as great perfection as the cinnamon of Ceylon.

Macas, from the frequent inſurrections of the Indians, lies almoſt a deſert. The climate varies from the others much. Winter laſts from April to September, which is the time of ſummer betwixt the Cordilleras. September is the fineſt ſeaſon: the atmoſphere is then clear, the ſky ſerene, the earth cloathed in its various beauties, a great contraſt to the horrors of winter which they are paſſed. In ſuch plants as require much heat and moiſture the country is fruitful: much tobacco is raiſed, which is exported in rolls all over Peru. Sugar-canes and cotton alſo thrive well; but the dread of the Indians prevents cultivation from ſpreading. In the woods are cinnamon-trees, much ſuperior to thoſe of Quixos, and ſome that had been a little attended to, yielded a bark ſuperior even to that of the Eaſt Indies.

The government of Jaen has a capital of the ſame name, containing three or four thouſand ſouls. The climate of the government is like that of Quixos, excepting the rains not being ſo violent. The ſoil is in general very fertile. The woods are full of wild cacao, the fruit of which, beſides the extreme exuberance of it, is equal to that cultivated in plantations, but, for want of ſale, rot on the trees.

Digitized by Google

It produces vaſt quantities of tobacco, the management of which is the chief occupation of the inhabitants. Much cotton is alſo produced, and a great many mules bred.

The government of Maynas, on the eaſt, joins the Portugueſe ſettlements, from which it is ſeparated by the famous line of demarcation. Through this province flows the great river Maranon or the Amazons: the ſources of which are various, for all the rivers which run from the Andes to the eaſt, unite to form it; but the common opinion is, that it flows from the lake of Lauricocha, from which to the ſea it runs eleven hundred leagues. In its long courſe are ſome parts, where the banks contracting themſelves form ſtreights, in which the rapidity of the current is very great. M. de la Condamine paſſed one of theſe called Pongo de Manzeriche, about two leagues long, in fifty-ſeven minutes. The breadth and depth is anſwerable to the length, and in the ſtreights this is augmented: ſome of the rivers that fall into it, may from their breadth be taken for the real Maranon, but the contrary is preſently ſeen by obſerving the little increaſe which the Maranon receives from their influx. In other places it diſplays its real grandeur, dividing into ſeveral branches, and including a multitude of iſlands: ſome of the branches are equal in breadth to a ſea-league, and in narrower places M. Condamine could find no bottom with a line of twenty-eight toiſes. Eaſt of the Napo, its breadth is from one thouſand to twelve hundred toiſes, or half a league, and no bottom with one hundred and three fathom of line. The river Negro, at the diſtance of two leagues from its junction with the Maranon, meaſured twelve hundred toiſes in breadth, which is nearly equal to the main river, which alſo is the caſe with the Ucayale, the Madera, and others. At the Eſtrecho de Pauxis, where the breadth is nine hun-

Digitized by Google

hundred toiſes, the effect of the tides may be perceived, though the diſtance from the ſea-coaſts, is not leſs than two hundred leagues; and after this vaſt courſe, it falls into the ſea through two mouths, the one forty-five leagues broad, and the other twelve leagues. Upon the whole, this river exceeds any other that is mentioned either in ſacred or profane hiſtory; the three names by which it is known, are the Maranon, the Amazons, and Orelana.

The foreſts on the banks of this vaſt river are filled with many ſorts of trees of a prodigious magnitude: others that yield balſams of an exquiſite fragrancy, and medicinal ſalubrious gums. Great quantities of vanillas, ſarſaparilla, &c; alſo a fruit nearly reſembling the Eaſt India clove. Among the animals of the river, the alligator is found, and ſea-cows three or four yards long, and of a proportional ſize. But the moſt remarkable, is a ſerpent of a frightful magnitude, and a moſt deleterious nature. It is ſaid to be ſo large as to ſwallow any beaſt whole, and has done ſo by many a man. In the length and thickneſs of the body, it nearly reſembles an old tree. It is very ſluggiſh, continuing motionleſs in one place, unleſs forced by hunger to go in queſt of food, and even then its motion is almoſt imperceptible, leaving a track like that of a log of timber drawn along the ground; and from this ſlowneſs, would not be able to catch its prey, were it not for the intoxicating quality of its breath, which ſtupifies every animal that comes within the ſphere of it.

The Indians of Quito are remarkable for being pretty much removed from any great appearance of genius; and at the ſame time do not want a conſiderable ſhare of natural ſagacity: they poſſeſs an immutable tranquility, either by fortunate or unfortunate events. In the meaneſt dreſs they are as well contented, as with the richeſt cloathing: riches have

no

Digitized by Google

no effect upon them; and even authority and grandeur are so little valued by them, that they shew no difference in pleasure, whether created an Alcalde, or forced to be a common Executioner. This goes also to their food, in which they are as well content with the plainest as the best, and satisfied with the mere quantity that suffices. Indolence is their great characteristic; nothing can rouse them from it: their wives do whatever is absolutely necessary; they spin and make the half drawers and shirts, which constitute the whole dress of their husbands. The Indian sits squat on his hams, and looks on his wife, while she is about the work of the house; and when they are settled in this posture, nothing can make them stir: if a traveller has lost his way, and comes to a cottage, the Indian is sure to hide himself, and make his wife deny him.

The only occasions, on which the Indians do not shew this extreme indolence, are days of ceremony and rejoicing; when they intoxicate themselves with chicha, and dance briskly; but without any order or measure. Any sort of entertainment generally lasts more days than one, that is, till they have drank up all their liquor, and have neither money nor credit to get any more.

Their common food is maize, ground to flour, after being roasted; this they eat with spoons, two or three spoonfuls, and a draught of chicha; or, for want of that, of water, concludes the repast. For a journey of fifty or one hundred leagues, all they take is a little bag of this meal; when hungry, they stop, somewhere where chicha or water is to be had.

Their habitations are small cottages, in the middle of which is the fire-place; and in one room, they and their domestic animals live promiscuously: They are so fond of dogs, that every hut has three or four little curs in it, a hog or two, and a little poultry.

Digitized by Google

poultry. A few pots and jugs of earthen-ware, with the cotton which their wives ſpin, conſtitute the whole of an Indian's effects. None of thoſe animals they breed are ever killed, the Indian women are ſo fond of their poultry that they will not part with them; ſo that if a traveller paſſes a night in a cottage, let him offer what he will for a fowl, they will not ſell one, ſo that if he has it he muſt kill it himſelf: at this the woman ſhrieks as if her child was murdered, till ſeeing there is no remedy, ſhe wipes her eyes and takes what is offered her.

In their journeys they often move with their whole family and furniture; at other times they leave all under the care of their dogs, who will certainly fly at any one that offers to enter, or meddle: and the dogs bred, by the Indians are trained up to an averſion to Spaniards and Meſtizos, and thoſe bred by the latter to an equal hatred of the Indians.

In their marriages they are very contrary to other nations, for they never marry a woman by choice that is a virgin, looking upon it as a ſure ſign that ſhe had nothing pleaſing in her. They alſo take their wives ſome time upon trial, and part with them with very little ceremony.

The Indians feel little of that natural dread of death which is ſo univerſal in other nations: they view its approach without perturbation, and the pain of the diſtemper affects them much more than the danger of it. Indeed the idea of death has ſcarce any power to change the compoſure and ſerenity of their minds. The ſame intrepidity, or unfeelingneſs appears in them upon other occaſions: one of them will place himſelf before a bull, with no other view but for the animal to run at him, and toſs him ſo high into the air that none but an Indian could ſurvive the fall; he riſes, however, without any hurt, and thinks he has got a victory over the

Digitized by Google

the bull. In a battle they ruſh on without any ſenſe of fear, and nothing daunted at the numbers that fall around them. They will halter a bull at full ſpeed, and with equal dexterity hunt bears. Their nooſe is made of cow-hides, ſo thin as to eſcape the beaſt's paws, and ſo ſtrong as not to be broken by his ſtruggles. On perceiving the bear, they immediately ride towards him, whilſt he ſits up to ſeize the horſe; but the Indian, marking his diſtance, throws the nooſe about the creature's neck, the other end being faſtened to the ſaddle; he then, clapping ſpurs to his horſe, gallops round the bear, who, unable to keep pace with the horſe, is choaked.

To the ſameneſs and ſimplicity of their food, with their freedom from anxiety, is to be attributed their longevity. I have known many quite roboſt and active at an hundred; but the ſmall-pox, and ſome other diſtempers, make great havoc among them.

Mountains in the Cordilleras of the Andes.

The height of ſome of the Cordilleras is very remarkable. From barometrical experiments made at Pucaguayco on the mountain Cotopaxi, we found the height to be one thouſand and twenty-three toiſes above the adjoining plain, and that of the latter twelve hundred and ſixty eight above the level of the ſea: thus the whole height is two thouſand two hundred and ninety-one; but the ſummit of the mountain was eight hundred and eighty higher, the point therefore is three thouſand one hundred and twenty-ſix toiſes above the level of the ſea, or ſomething above three geogrophic miles, ſix hundred and thirty-nine toiſes higher than the top of Pinchinchra.

In

In these Cordilleras, the most southern mountain is that of Mecas, properly called Sanguay, though in this country known by the former. It is of a prodigious height, and the greatest part of the whole surface is covered with snow. It is a volcano, the top continually burning, attended with explosions, which are heard at the distance of forty leagues, and when the wind is fair even at Quito which is farther. The country adjoining to it is totally barren, being covered with cinders.

About five leagues from Latacunga is the mountain Cotopaxi, which became a volcano at the time the Spaniards first arrived here. In 1743, it broke out afresh, there having been for some days a great rumbling in its bowels. One aperture was made in the summit, and three others near the middle of its declivity, then buried under prodigious masses of snow, which melting from the heat poured down in such amazing torrents that all the plains became lakes, and the villages, &c. all swept away with the greatest rapidity. After some days it was quiet, neither fire nor smoke being seen: but in 1744, it broke out again, and in clear nights the flames, being reflected from vast sheets of ice, formed the grandest illuminations that can be imagined.

Among the rocks and precipices of these mountains are many torrents and rivers, over which are made bridges of a peculiar construction: they are of bejucos, and used where the breadth is too great to admit beams to be laid across; they twist several bejucos together so as to form a large cable. Six of these are carried from one side of the river to the other, two being higher than the other four: on the latter are laid sticks, and on them branches of trees to make a floor, and the other two cables form rails to the bridge. These are only for men: the mules are unladen and swim over half a league above the

Digitized by Google

the bridge, to allow for the rapidity of the current carrying the mule out of his courſe. But there are ſome bejuco-bridges ſo large that whole droves of mules paſs over them, particularly on the river Apurimac, acroſs which paſſes all the commerce betwixt Lima, Cuſco, La Plata, &c.

Another way of paſſing their rivers is by means of a Tarabita, which ſerves to carry over both men and beaſts: it is only a ſingle rope made of bejucos, or thongs of an ox's hide, ſix or eight inches in diameter. It is extended acroſs the river, and faſtened to ſtrong poſts. On one ſide they have a winch to ſtraiten or ſlacken the rope; and from it hangs a kind of leathern hammock, large enough to hold a man, and ſuſpended by a clue at each end: a rope is alſo ſo faſtened to the clue, and extended to both ſides the river to draw the hammock along: at ſetting off a puſh ſends it quickly over. For carrying over mules, two tarabitas are neceſſary, and the ropes are much thicker and ſlacker. On theſe the beaſt is ſuſpended, ſecured by girts round the belly, neck, and legs; when theſe are faſtened, he is ſhoved off, and immediately landed on the other ſide. When they are uſed to it, they are perfectly quiet, and will come to be girted; but at firſt they kick and fling about during their ſhort paſſage very much. The river Alchipichi is enough to frighten a young traveller when paſſed in this manner: it is between thirty and forty fathoms from ſhore to ſhore, and twenty-five fathoms above the water that the ropes are extended.

The roads in this country are anſwerable to the bridges. Along ſome declivities, the path is ſo narrow, that there is hardly room for the feet of the beaſt, part of its body, and that of the rider, being over a torrent fifty or ſixty fathoms beneath the road; ſo that nothing can exceed the horror of ſuch journeys before habit familiariſes it. Some amends

Digitized by Google

amends are made by the ſecurity from robbers: no robbery is ever heard of. Single men are met unarmed with great charges of money about them, who travel ſo without the leaſt apprehenſion, and go into an inn, and ſleep with the doors open without the leaſt fear or ſuſpicion. This is a circumſtance very much to be wiſhed in other countries.

The parts of theſe deſerts, which are not conſtantly frozen, are covered with a ruſh reſembling Geniſta Hiſpanica, but much more ſoft and flexible. In theſe parts, where the above ruſh is the principal product, the ſoil is little adapted to cultivation, but produces a tree which the inhabitants call Quinual.

Among the birds, which inhabit theſe mountains, the condor is much the largeſt, its colour reſembles the galinazo's, and it often takes its flight from the higheſt mountains, and ſoars ſo as to be out of ſight from them: from having rarely been ſeen in any but the higheſt ſituations, a ſubtle air has been thought to agree beſt with them: ſome have been tamed and kept in the villages. They are very carniverous, frequently carrying off lambs. As they do great damage to the flocks, the Indians contrive means to deſtroy them: one way is by poiſoned fleſh, another by traps; but the bird is ſo ſtrong that ſometimes, after he is caught, he will knock down the man with his wings that comes to ſecure him.

The zumbador, or hummer, is a night-bird, ſo called from a humming noiſe they make by the rapidity of their flight. They are never ſeen in the day, and in a clear night I could, when they paſſed very near us, diſtinguiſh nothing of their magnitude, only a white line which they formed in the air. The Indians brought us one, ſcarce fledged, that was as big as a partridge. Another extraordinary bird, that

that chiefly inhabits low vallies and marſhy places, is the canclon, which is bigger than a large gooſe.

In gardens of all kinds in the villages are found the humming-bird, the whole body of which, with its plumage, is not larger than a middling nutmeg. The plumage is very beautiful, having ſtreaks of burniſhed gold colour; while the body is green, ſpotted with yellow and blue: It hovers over flowers, and ſucks their juices, without hurting, or diſordering their leaves.

The Llama is a tame animal of the country, reſembling a camel, but has no bunch, and is much ſmaller: it has the pace of that animal, and the height of an aſs. The Indians uſe them for burthen, and they do very well for any load under an hundred weight. It is a very docile creature, and eaſily kept: they abound chiefly in the diſtricts of Riobamba.

In the ſouthern provinces of Peru, they have two other animals, nearly reſembling the llama, the vicuna, and the guanaco; the firſt is ſmaller than the llama, and its wool ſhorter: the guanaco is much longer, with long and harſh wool: it is of very great ſervice in the mines, carrying metals in ſuch rugged roads, as no other beaſt could go in.

The Indians breed in their cottages an animal, called Chuca, alſo Muca-muca: it reſembles a rat, but is conſiderably bigger, with a ſnout like that of a hog; under the belly of the female is a membranous bag, which opens and ſhuts at pleaſure. Into this bag its young ones are brought, and kept there till fit to wean. Several of our party examined a dead one, that began to ſtink: the young ones in the bag were full of life, each with a teat in its mouth. The Indians eat the Chuca.

Before I quit theſe mountainous deſerts, I ſhall mention a phænomenon very common in them: We ſaw it in Pambamacca. At break of day the

Digitized by Google

mountain was encompaſſed with very thick clouds, which the riſing of the ſun diſperſed, leaving vapours only, that were inviſible. Oppoſite to the ſun, and ten toiſes from us, we ſaw, as in a looking-glaſs, our images; the head being as in the centre of three concentrick iriſes: and at ſome diſtance from them, a fourth arch, entirely white: theſe were perpendicular to the horizon; and as we moved, the phenomenon moved in the ſame order. But what was moſt remarkable, though we were ſix or ſeven together, every one ſaw the arches, with reſpect to himſelf, and not thoſe relating to others. As the ſun roſe, the diameter of the arches altered, and the whole vaniſhed gradually, after continuing ſome time.

We had the pleaſure, on the mountains, of often ſeeing arches formed by the light of the moon: others alſo entirely white, formed along the ſlope of the mountain. We attribute theſe phænomena to the atmoſphere being greatly affected by the exhalations of the ſoil, and of a nature adapted to kindling. Meteors are very common, and often very large: I ſaw a very extraordinary one at Quito, of a globe of fire, a foot in diameter, which took its courſe from behind Pichincha, and illumined the whole city and country.

The manner of hunting in this country is very extraordinary, and ſhews more dexterity in horſemanſhip than any ſimilar exerciſe in Europe. It is performed by numerous parties, divided into two ſetts, one on horſeback the other on foot; the latter being generally Indians; who beat out the beaſts that the horſemen may hunt them. At break of day they repair to the ſummit of ſome mountain, each with a greyhound; then the horſemen take their ſtation on the top, while the Indians ſcour the bottom and ſides of the hill, to ſtart the deer: ſometimes the company is numerous enough to arrange themſelves in this order

Digitized by Google

der over an extent of three or four leagues. The moment a deer appears, the horſe that firſt ſees it ſtarts off with incredible rapidity, ſo that the rider is unable to controul or ſtop him: the horſe purſues his way down the ſteepeſt ſlopes, where a man with the greateſt care could ſcarcely keep his legs; acroſs the moſt dreadful ſteps: in a wood nothing ſtops him; and a rider, not well convinced of the ſagacity of the animal, would be tempted every moment to throw himſelf from the ſaddle: this is the courſe for ſeveral leagues, till the horſe tires, or the deer is killed. The other horſes, as ſoon as they ſee one horſe in purſuit, ſet off in the ſame way after him: they do not want their riders to animate them; the cries of the dogs, the ſhouts of the Indians; nay, the leaſt ſign in a dog having found game, ſets them on the wing. The rider muſt be very attentive to keep a ſteady ſeat, for the leaſt neglect throws him infallibly over the horſe's head, and a broken neck, or being cruſhed to death, is the conſequence. Their common pace is trotting, but they have a ſort called Aguilillas that only pace, yet ſo ſwift as to equal the full ſpeed of other horſes. I had one of this kind which often carried me from Callao to Lima, which is two leagues and a half, in twenty-nine minutes, yet the road is part of it very bad and ſtony, and he would bring me back again in twenty-eight or twenty-nine more without ever taking off the bridle. They are remarkably eaſy to the rider. Very few horſes here are handſome, but they are exceedingly docile and full of intrepidity.

Mines.

The circumſtance in all the provinces of Peru, and indeed in the principal of the Spaniſh ſettlements, is the plenty of ſilver. This is ſo much become the ſtaple of the country, that the moſt fer-

Digitized by Google

tile ſoils, bleſſed with the happieſt climate, whoſe fields yield the richeſt harveſts, whoſe trees bend beneath the moſt luxuriant fruits, and whoſe paſtures are covered with flocks and herds, ſuch territories are neglected and deſpiſed if the bowels of the mountains do not abound with this precious metal. Quito, of all the provinces of Peru, is the moſt fertile in grain and fruits, the moſt populous in Spaniards, abounds moſt in cattle, has the moſt manufactures, and at the ſame time that ſhe enjoys theſe advantages, is equally rich in mines with any other; yet very few of theſe are worked, and for this reaſon we do not ſee in the province that affluence and ſplendor which reigns where there is a greater circulation of ſilver.

Of the many mines in the province of Quito, ſome are abandoned which once yielded rich returns. The rich ones in Macas were loſt irrecoverably by a revolt of the Indians, ſo that even all remembrance of their ſituation is loſt. Thoſe of Zaruma were neglected for want of hands. To this change it is owing, that the country is neither ſo opulous nor ſo rich as formerly.

The juriſdiction of Popayan is, however, an exception, for there are great numbers of gold-mines worked there now; and the gold is here found without any heterogeneous body, ſo that no mercury is required to extract it. It is found diſperſed and mixed with the natural earth and gravel, as ſands are found mixed with earths of different ſpecies.

The method of ſeparation through that diſtrict is, to make a large reſervoir, into which the ore and its impurities are laid; then, by a conduit it is filled with water, and the whole ſtirred well together, till all is become a mud: the lighter parts are then waſhed away by another conduit; and what remains is waſhed again in buckets, till the gold is ſeparated from the heavy earth. It is uſually found in grains no bigger

Digitized by Google

bigger than thoſe of ſand. The labourers in this work are generally negroe ſlaves bought by the owners for this purpoſe.

The mountain of Pichincha is by the people of Quito thought to contain immenſe treaſures, and the grains of gold found in the ſands, which are waſhed from it, confirms the opinion; yet is there not the leaſt veſtige all over the mountain that any mine was ever worked in it. But, indeed, the whole Cordillera abounds with ſimilar appearances. There are, however, many mines that have been diſcovered and found to be rich, yet have been deglected for want of ability to carry them on. The whole country of Pallactanga, in the juriſdiction of Riobamba, is full of mines of gold and ſilver, abounding with them to ſuch a degree, that one perſon, from whom we received great civilities, entered on his own account at the mine-office at Quito eighteen veins of gold and ſilver, and all of a good quality. In the mountains of Cuença, and the diſtrict of Alauſi, are mines that, if worked with any ſpirit, would, in all probabability, be found in number and richneſs equal to thoſe which have poured ſuch torrents of wealth into the ſouthern provinces of Peru. The ſupineneſs of the inhabitants in this reſpect is thought to be owing to the plenty of the country. Proviſions of all ſorts are ſo cheap and plentiful, that the people, having all things they can wiſh for, will not trouble themſelves with mines.

The governments of Quixos and Macas abound alſo greatly in mines: thoſe in Jaen alſo are of infinite richneſs. The Indians on the banks of the Maranon waſh the ſands of the rivers that come from thoſe countries, and find much gold-duſt with little trouble. Nor is it only in gold and ſilver that the provinces of Quito abound, there are quickſilver ones for working them, found in the juriſdiction of Cuença. The city of the ſame name

Digitized by Google

ſtands on an iron-mine which, from ſome experiments that have been made, is probably a very rich one; nor is there much doubt, but copper, tin, and lead ones might be found if the inhabitants were induſtrious in this branch.

Indian Monuments.

The firſt inhabitants of Peru, though ignorant in moſt of the ſciences which were known in the old world, yet had ſome little acquaintance with mechanicks, for without them ſome of their works would appear more ſtupendous than they are. They raiſed works not entirely devoid of art and beauty. Some parts of their ſtructnres, of which there are yet ſuperb ruins, prove that their contrivance and ingenuity were really admirable. Like the Egyptians they had a great deſire of marking their burial-places with laſting monuments. In the juriſdiction of the town of Cayambe, ſome of the plains are almoſt covered with tumuli thrown upon the bodies of princes and caciques. In theſe are found, when opened, beſides the ſkeleton, ſome few Indian utenſils, now and then of gold. But the moſt curious things are wrought emeralds. The mines, from whence they were taken, are now entirely loſt; in beauty, ſize, and hardneſs, they are ſuperior to thoſe of Santa Fé. To the amazement of the curious they were cut by the Indians in ſpherical, cylindrical, conical, and other figures, but all perfectly accurate. How they could work a ſtone of ſuch hardneſs is amazing, for ſteel and iron were moſt certainly unknown to them.

Near the town of Cayambe is an Indian temple built of unbaked bricks: the figure is circular, and of the diameter eight toiſes; part of the wall two toiſes and a half high, and four or five feet thick, is now ſtanding. The cement of the bricks is of the ſame earth

Digitized by Google

earth they are made of, and they are ſo hard as to have perfectly withſtood the injuries of time.

In the plain near Latacunga are ſtill to be ſeen the walls of one of the Ynca's palaces, and now called by its ancient name Callo. It is at preſent the manſion of a plantation belonging to the Auguſtines at Quito. The materials are of a prodigious magnitude. It is entered by a paſſage five or ſix toiſes long, which leads into a court, round which are three ſpacious ſaloons, and adjoining many other aparments. The whole is entirely of ſtone, and the colour almoſt black. They are ſo nicely cut and joined, that the blade of a knife, nor even a piece of the thinneſt paper cannot be put between them. No cement is perceivable.

About fifty toiſes north of this place, is a mountain very ſingular, from being in the middle of a plain: it is from twenty to thirty toiſes high, and of ſo exact a conical roundneſs, that it clearly appears to have been the work of art. The end of the ſlope on every ſide forms the ſame angle with the ground on every part Certain it is, that Guacas, or Mauſoleums, of progidious magnitude, were ſtrangely affected by the Peruvians. It might alſo ſerve as a watch-tower to give notice to the Prince of invaſions, as it commands an interrupted view of the country.

Two leagues from the town of Atun-canar is a fortreſs, or palace of the Yncas, the moſt entire, the largeſt, and beſt built in the whole kingdom. By its entrance runs a little river, and the back of it is formed by a high and thick wall at the ſlope of a mountain: in the middle is a kind of oval watch-tower, in the middle of which, is a ſquare apartment with loop-holes, that appears to have been a guard-room; this tower was ſurrounded at a diſtance by an angular wall, incloſing a large ſpot of ground; and in an inner ſquare are ſeveral apartments, which

Digitized by Google

from their height, diſpoſition, and other circumſtances, were plainly the Prince's. The whole main-wall is very thick, and perpendicular on the outſide, and around it leads a very high parapet. The whole is of ſtone cut and joined with the ſame exactneſs as thoſe mentioned above. Beſides theſe and ſome other ſimilar ruins, there are remains of others of a ruder workmanſhip, which were probably erected by the inhabitants before the conqueſt by the Yncas.

On the plain of Talqui, ſouth of Cuença, is a quarry, from which are taken very large and beautiful blocks of white and clear alabaſter: it is however ſoft. Rock cryſtal is found in many parts in great perfection. In the juriſdiction of Cuença, there has alſo been found ſome very fine fragments of rubies, uſually found among the ſand of a rapid river; the inhabitants however content themſelves with picking up ſome ſparks, waſhed by the water from the mine, without thinking of a ſearch of the mine itſelf.

North of Quito, there is a large river that petrifies any wood, leaves, &c. that are thrown into it. I have had whole branches petrified in it, and the poroſity of the ſtem, the fibres of the rind, and the ſmalleſt veins of the leaves as diſcernable, as when freſh cut from the tree.

Having mentioned more than once wild Indians, I ſhall remark that the provinces of Quito, from north to ſouth, are quite free from their neighbourhood; but the juriſdictions of Quixos, Macas, Jaen, and Maynas are ſurrounded and intermixed with them. And the ſubjected Indians often go over to them to enjoy the better their ſloth and licentiouſneſs.

While we were at Cuença fininſhing our aſtronomical obſervations, we unexpectedly received a letter from the Marquis de Villa Garcia, Viceroy of Peru, deſiring our immediate preſence at his capital. A war had broke out between Spain and England,

Digitized by Google

England, and he had received advice, that the enemy were ſending a conſiderable fleet into the South Seas: among other precautions to defeat any attempts, the Viceroy thought that our preſence might be of uſe to him. We obeyed the order, and went directly to Quito to prepare for the journey, September 24, 1740. The 30th of October we left that city. We took the road by Guayaquil, where we found a ſhip bound for Puna, and entered that port November 3d. There we took a Balza, which brought us through the gulph to Machala. The 9th in the morning, I got to Tumbez, where we were obliged to ſtop for want of mules. The heat at this place was exceedingly troubleſome; rain ſometimes does not fall for ſeveral years ſucceſſively, but when it does come, it laſts through a whole winter. The country from hence to Lima, between the Cordillera and the ſea, is called Valles.

The inhabitants of Tumbez and the neighbourhood, which is chiefly confined to the banks of the river, cultivate maize, and all other fruits and vegetables of a hot climate, and where they cannot conduct the water, they make great uſe of a leguminous tree, called Algarrobale, which produces beans ſomewhat reſembling the Valencia bean of Spain: the bean is a very hearty food for cattle, giving to their fleſh a delicious flavour.

The 24th I got to Piura, ſixty-two leagues from Tumbez; the chief of the way, is over a continued deſert. It goes by the town of Amotape, which contains about thirty houſes, filled with Indians and meſtizos: near it is a river of the ſame name, the waters of which enable the inhabitants to cultivate a variety of uſeful plants: the country is every where improved, and divided into fields, which produce great plenty of grain, &c. Croſſing this river, the road to Piura leads two leagues through lofty foreſts of algarrobales, and leaving theſe, the road croſſes

Digitized by Google

a ſandy plain, in which the wind levels all tracks, and leaves no other direction to the traveller, than the ſun and the ſtars.

Piura is in latitude five degrees eleven minutes one ſecond ſouth, built of bricks dried in the ſun. It is the reſidence of a Corregidor, whoſe juriſdiction extends over Valles, and into the mountains. The number of inhabitants is about fifteen hundred. The climate is very hot and very dry, rains being rarely known, yet it is very healthy. The river is, from the dryneſs of the climate, of very great uſe: the ſoil is flat and ſandy, ſo that water is eaſily conveyed by channels. The whole territory of Valles producing little beſides algarrabole, maize, cotton, and a few fruits, moſt of the inhabitants breed goats, great numbers of which are ſold for ſlaughter, and they make ſoap of the fat to be ſold at Lima, Quito, &c. They make ſomething alſo of a thread they make from a vegetable they call Pita, which grows on the mountains.

The 21ſt we continued our journey, reaching the town of Sechura the next day. It contains two hundred houſes, inhabited by four hundred Indian families, who are all either muleteers or fiſhermen. The 25th we got to Morrope, thirty leagues from Sechura, croſs a deſert of ſand. The uniform aſpect of this plain, with its extent, which is great, and the continual motion of the ſand, which inſtantly effaces all tracts, often bewilders travellers, though attended by the moſt experienced guides: the regular ſouth-wind is the beſt direction. It is very dangerous to ſtop for reſt or ſleep, many people having then loſt their way, and wandered till they periſhed.

The 26th we left Morrope, and arrived at Lambayeque, conſiſting of fifteen hundred houſes with three thouſand inhabitants. As far as the people conduct the water of the river here, as in the preceding

Digitized by Google

ceding places, they find the ſoil fertile in the neceſſary productions. The 29th we got twenty leagues farther to Saint Pedro, a ſmall Indian town. The 30th we reached Payjan, the country adjacent to which being alſo watered by canals, produces the greateſt plenty of ſugar-canes, grapes, fruits, and maize.

Purſuing our journey, we arrived at Truxillo, ſituated half a league from the ſea: it is a conſiderable place, being the reſidence of many wealthy families. There is a ſenſible diſtinction of climates here; the winter being diſtinguiſhed by cold though ſo near the line, and the ſummer exceſſively hot. All the vale is extremely fruitful, yielding maize, ſugar-canes, fruits, &c. and abounding with vineyards, and olive-yards; while the parts bordering on the mountains produce wheat, barley, and other grain; from which plenty, they are enabled to export conſiderable quantities of wheat and ſugars to Panama.: add to this, that the fertility of the place is much ornamented by groves, plantations, and well-cultivated gardens. Much of it is owing to the waters of the river being very much ſpread by canals.

The 5th we came to Biru a little town, alſo ſurrounded by a variety of watered and well cultivated lands. The next day, after croſſing deſert plains, we got to Chimbadores, and forded the river Santa, which is here a quarter of a league in breadth, forming five ſtreams, which always run with very great rapidity. Perſons attended with high horſes, who are accuſtomed to ſtem the current, and the guides are obliged to be very attentive to keep the fords, which are liable to change. The velocity of the current is a league and half in an hour, but when ſwelled with rains, it muſt be conſiderably more. The 8th we left Biru, and the next day paſſed the Tambo, or inn built by the Yncas for the uſe of travellers. The 13th we got to Callejones, paſſing

ſandy

ſandy deſerts, or rocky eminences. The 15th we gained the banks of the river Barranca, which we forded, as we had done the Santa, and ſoon came to a town of the ſame name, containing two hundred houſes; and to another called Guaura. The environs are exceedingly delightful, as far as the eye can reach: the country is covered with ſugar-canes, or divided into fields of corn and maize, making a beautiful ſcenery. The climate is alſo fine, the ſky clear, and the air temperate.

From hence we went to Chancay, ſurrounded by grounds well watered from the river, and generally planted with maize for the purpoſe of fattening hogs, great quantities of which are exported to Lima, which city we reached on the 18th: our journey having been in the whole about two hundred and ſixty-four leagues. Much the greateſt part of it being over a ſandy deſert without water or refreſhment, is travelled in the night; and the road is more to be diſtinguiſhed by the bones of mules that have died of fatigue, than by any track. In this journey, you muſt not only carry from town to town your proviſions, but alſo wood for fires, and kitchen utenſils of all ſorts. The number of canals that have been mentioned for conducting the waters of the rivers to fertilize theſe burning ſands, were all the work of the Yncas, who taught their ſubjects this way of rendering the earth productive.

Lima is the capital of Peru, and may be called the Queen of all the cities of South America, is ſituated in the extenſive and delightful valley of Rimac, and as we found from obſervations in latitude twelve degrees two minutes thirty-one ſeconds ſouth, and in longitude two hundred and ninety-nine degrees twenty-ſeven minutes ſeven ſeconds two thirds from the meridian of Teneriffe. Nothing can be finer than its ſituation, commanding the whole valley.

Before

Digitized by Google

Before the dreadful earthquake of October 28th 1746, the buildings were elegant, and many of them magnificent: but nothing could exceed the ſplendour, with which the churches and convents were decorated. The altars from their very baſes, to the borders of the paintings, are covered with maſſive ſilver, wrought into ornaments. The walls alſo of the churches, are hung with velvet or tapeſtry of equal value. Candleſticks, emboſſed tables, pedeſtals, ſtatues, &c. of the precious metals.

Lima is the uſual reſidence of the Viceroy, whoſe juriſdiction extends over all Peru; but the audience of Quito has been lately detached from it. The government is triennial; but the ſovereign ſometimes grants a new period. It is an office of the higheſt importance, for he enjoys all the royal privileges. He is abſolute in all affairs, whether civil, military, criminal, or political. He has two bodies of guards: beſides aſſiſting at the courts of juſtice, and the councils of finances and war, he every day gives audience publickly to all ſorts of perſons; for which purpoſe, there are in the palace ſpacious apartments. He has a ſecretary of ſtate, who, from his official powers, is really a prime miniſter. Public juſtice is adminiſtered in a court, called the Audiencia, from the decrees of which, there is no appeal; it is held in the palace, and conſiſts of eight judges. The chamber of accounts is next, in which the diſtribution and management of the royal revenue are regulated. Alſo the royal treaſury, which has the ſuperintendance of all the King's revenue; there are other inferior courts of police, &c. And they have at Lima an univerſity, which makes a ſtately appearance, with great numbers of wealthy and well-endowed churches and convents. The riches and pomp of the place are never ſo well ſeen, as on an entrance of a Viceroy, which is by much the moſt pompous ſhew in all America.

The

Digitized by Google

The people of Lima are, like thoſe of the other great towns of Spaniſh America, compoſed of whites or Spaniards, blacks, Indians, and Meſtizos. There are ſixteen or eighteen thouſand whites in the city: among them are many noble and wealthy families. There are forty-five Counts and Marquiſes, many Knights of military orders, and twenty-four gentlemen of great eſtates, but without titles, moſt of them having ancient ſeats, a proof of the antiquity of their families. One of them traces his deſcent undeniably from the Yncas, the name Ampuero, one of the Spaniſh Commanders, who married a daughter of the Ynca: the kings of Spain have on this account granted various honours and privileges as marks of its quality. People of fortune in general live very ſplendidly: there are many coaches kept, but every body of any eminence keeps a chaiſe, many of which are ſo ornamented as to coſt eight hundred or one thouſand crowns, and there are five or ſix thouſand of them in the city. The wealth and ſplendor of the place is very much owing to the nobility all following commerce, which is no derogation to their civil or military honour.

In their dreſs the women of fortune are expenſive to a degree that is known ſcarcely any where elſe: they wear an amazing profuſion of the fineſt Flanders laces, and cover themſelves ſo with pearls, diamonds, and other precious ſtones, that a well-dreſſed woman of the firſt rank has rarely leſs than thirty or forty thouſand crowns on her back. It is not, however, on dreſs only that they have to value themſelves; their perſons are generally of a middling ſize, handſome, genteel, with very fine complections without art, fine long black hair, and eyes of extraordinary luſtre. In their behaviour they are eaſy and graceful, their manners wonderfully agreeable: their ideas juſt, their converſation charming, and their language pure. No wonder, therefore, that

Digitized by Google

that ſo many Europeans forget the fair proſpects they have at home, and marry and ſettle here. The way of living at Lima gives the ladies the conſtant opportunity of exhibiting and improving theſe qualities; for aſſemblies of converſation, &c. are univerſal, and their whole life is filled with ſhew and feſtivity. Muſic is univerſally in faſhion, and balls for dancing much frequented. The manners of the nobility are much to be commended: they are exceedingly hoſpitable, yet very polite. They receive ſtrangers without flattery and without haughtineſs.

Nothing can be more agreeable than the climate of Lima. None of the ſeaſons are troubleſome from either heat or cold, but all moderate. Cool weather is generally owing to the ſouth winds, which come from the icy regions of the ſouth pole; but ice or ſnow are never known at Lima, nor yet any unſupportable heat. There is, however, a circumſtance which renders the climate of Lima diſagreeable in winter, which is the almoſt conſtancy of fogs, ſo that you can ſee neither the ſun by day, nor the ſtars by night. This fog, however, deſcends in a copious dew, and covers the country in a wonderful degree with verdure and flowers, and has all thoſe effects which in other climates attend rains, but ere it never rains. This ſingular phænomenon is, perhaps, owing to the different force of the winds exerted in different regions of the atmoſphere. The ſouth wind in Peru blows with the greateſt force in a part of the atmoſphere at ſome diſtance from the earth. In ſummer, when the ſun moſt exerts his power in raiſing the vapours, they no ſooner reach that height where the winds blow, than they are carried away before they get high enough to be formed into drops of rain, and conſequently none can fall. And in winter the atmoſphere being much more condenſed, and meeting

Digitized by Google

with that from the ſouthern regions, the vapours find the greater difficulty in riſing.

Tempeſts are as uncommon at Lima as rain, inſomuch that ſuch of the inhabitants as have not travelled into other parts are abſolute ſtrangers to thunder and lightning: this circumſtance is the more remarkable, as there are very violent tempeſts within thirty leagues to the weſtward.

But great as the natural advantages of Lima are, there are inconveniences and evils which form a contraſt: of theſe I ſhall firſt mention vermine. The people are ſo plagued with bugs and fleas, that no care or attention can keep them free from them. The muſquetos are very troubleſome, but not to ſuch exceſs as the former. But what is much worſe than theſe is the frequency of earthquakes, which come ſo frequently that the inhabitants are never free from the fear of being buried under the ruins of their houſes. They vary both in duration and violence, but happen ſo often, that the people never forget them. I felt five in the year 1742. However ſudden they may be, yet there are preſages remarked by attentive perſons. Among others, a rumbling noiſe in the earth; the dogs howl in a dreadful manner; and laden beaſts in the ſtreets ſtop as if they felt a motion, and wanted to guard againſt it. Upon theſe warnings the people inſtantly quit their houſes, and the ſtreets are immediately in all the confuſion that can be imagined.

The 28th of October 1746, at half an hour after ten at night, an earthquake came on with ſuch violence, that in little more than three minutes, nine tenths of all the buildings in the city were deſtroyed, burying all the inhabitants that had not time to hurry into the ſtreets and ſquares; nor was this firſt violence the whole, for in twenty-four hours they counted two hundred ſhocks, and before the 24th of the following February, four hundred

dred and fifty were obſerved, ſome of them as violent as the firſt. Callao, at the very ſame hour, ſunk in ruins, and the ſea, riſing in mountainous waves, broke in and overwhelmed both ruins and country. The ſame night a volcano in Lucanas burſt forth, and threw out ſuch quantities of water that the whole country was overflowed.

The connection between volcanos and earthquakes appears very manifeſt in this country. Experience ſhews here by the many volcanos in the Cordilleras, &c. that the burſting of a new burning mountain cauſes a violent earthquake, ſo as totally to deſtroy all the towns within its reach. But this does not ſo regularly happen with a ſecond irruption; an aperture therefore being once made, is ſo far a ſecurity to the neighbourhood from earthquakes.

Notwithſtanding the warmth of the ſummer, yet are there very few venomous creatures at Lima, or in all Valles; this probably is owing to the natural drought of the climate. The diſtempers moſt common are malignant, intermitting, and catarrhous fevers, pleuriſies, and conſtipations; theſe are almoſt continual in the city: and the ſmall-pox at times rages much. Convulſions alſo are very frequent.

Agriculture.

One would at firſt imagine that a country where it never rains muſt be barren, but no concluſion could be more contrary to the truth. Induſtry has corrected the want by artificial watering. The Yncas taught the ancient inhabitants to fertilize their dry ſandy ſoils by cutting many canals for the mere purpoſe of watering the fields. Theſe the Spaniards have been very aſſiduous to keep up, and with them they water very ſpacious fields of wheat and barley, meadows, plantations of ſugar-canes, olive-

Digitized by Google

olive-trees, vineyards, and gardens. Nor can any thing exceed the plenty which they all yield.

Before the earthquake of 1687, the products of corn were sufficient to supply the consumption of the inhabitants; but that dreadful convulsion so poisoned the soil, that the wheat rotted soon after it was sown, probably owing to the quantity of sulphureous particles left. The owners of the lands applied them to other branches of culture, particularly to meadows of clover, and plantations of sugar-canes which were not affected; and it was forty years before the farmers found that their fields had recovered their former fertility: wheat and barley were then sowed again, but never to this day in so great plenty as before, owing something perhaps to the supply being got into another channel by the corn-trade with Chili. Clover is now the great article near Lima, it being the only fodder for that inconceivable number of horses and mules which are kept there. Next to this are the sugar-plantations, which are very extensive and productive, and are cultivated by negro slaves. The olive-trees are so much higher, longer, and fuller of leaves than those of Spain, that the plantations of them look like thick forests. They are never pruned, which makes their branches so thick and close, that even the light cannot penetrate through them. All the culture they receive is to dig a hole at the root of every tree for receiving the water, to keep the channels open that bring it, and every three or four years to cut down all shoots, in order to form passages for gathering the fruit. The crops they yield are very great, and the oil is much preferable to that of Spain.

Around the city are gardens producing in the greatest luxuriance all the vegetables and fruits common in those of Spain, or known in America: the climate, soil, and cultivation unite so much for these articles, that no other place I have seen is to be

Digitized by Google

be compared to this. The grapes are of various ſorts: that called the Italian, is the moſt delicious. The vines are extended over the ſurface of the ground; they are pruned and watered, and yield greatly without other culture. Nor is any other attention given to thoſe which are intended for wine; but they are formed into eſpaliers.

The ſoil is ſtony and ſandy, and the ſmooth flints or pebbles are ſo numerous that the ſoil ſeems compoſed of nothing elſe, and is exceedingly inconvenient to travellers. Thoſe fields that are arable have a ſtratum of earth a foot or two thick on the ſurface, but below is nothing but ſtones. This circumſtance, with the ſimilarity of all the coaſts to the bottom of the ſea, gives the greateſt reaſon to think that this whole ſpace to the breadth of three or four leagues has formerly been covered by the ocean. Water throughout this dry country is every where found by digging four or five feet, the ſprings being innumerable.

In the diſtrict of Chancay, and ſome other parts of the coaſt, the farmers manure their fields with the dung of a bird called the Guanoe, which abound to ſuch an aſtoniſhing degree, that where they reſt of nights they leave whole ſtratums of dung, and in ſuch quantities that though it is carried away continually it is never exhauſted, and if you bore to a conſiderable depth, ſtill it is all dung. It has been thought by ſome to be only rich earth, but I was preſent myſelf, when a bark came to load, and the inſupportable ſtench of the cargo convinced me of this miſtake. It is uſed for every thing, except wheat and barley. In planting maize a bit of it is put cloſe to every ſtem and immediately watered.

At Lima their bread is better than any other place in all this part of America, and at the ſame time is ſo reaſonable that no other ſort is uſed by any rank of people. The mutton is the meat moſt generally

Digitized by Google

generally uſed, and is very good: the beef is alſo good: partridges, poultry, and turtle-doves, are plentiful: pork excellent, and abundant: fiſh is plentiful and very good of the ſort; ſeveral villages on the coaſt being peopled with fiſhermen for the purpoſe of ſupplying Lima: among theſe the quantity of anchovies exceed belief. The wines at this city are ſome of them very good. But notwithſtanding the general plenty of all eatables, yet the price is high, being, bread excepted, four or five times dearer than at Quito. Fiſh is, however, cheap, which is a great relief to the poor, who ſubſiſt very much upon it. Wine, oil, and dried fruits are alſo among the loweſt articles. Sweatmeats are in the ſame plenty that they are found in the other parts of South America. Chocolate is not ſo much uſed as Paraguay tea, which is very generally drank.

Trade.

Lima, beſides being the capital of the kingdom, the reſidence of the government and all tribunals, is the great ſeat and ſtaple of commerce, both for the products and manufactures of Europe and America. The more ſouthern provinces ſend all their wealth hither in its way northward to the galleons. Among the branches of its American commerce is that of ſnuff, which is ſent from the Havannah to Mexico, and from hence comes to Lima; from the ſame country comes alſo pitch, tar, iron, and indigo. From Terra Firma there comes large cargoes of leaf-tobacco, and ſome pearls. The former is brought to ſatisfy a great demand at Lima. The common people chew it to exceſs, beſides ſmoaking very generally: and the women of all ranks, even the ladies, carry in their mouths a leaf by way of cleanſing their teeth. Chili ſends hither wheat, flour, lard, leather, cordage, wines, dried fruit, and ſome gold.

Digitized by Google

gold. Copper and tin in bars come from Coquimbo. It receives ſails, and other ſtuffs made of cotton, from the mountains Caxamarca and Chacapoyas. Valles ſupplies Cordovan leather, and ſoap. From the ſouthern provinces of Peru it receives Vicuna wool, and ſtuffs of uncommon fineneſs. From Paraguay there comes an immenſe quantity of the herb for tea, the conſumption of which is prodigious.

Lima being thus the grand emporium of all this part of America, it may eaſily be conceived, that the wealth of the merchants muſt be great; yet, is not this ſo much the caſe as might be apprehended, owing to the height of the expences of carrying on their commerce. There are not more than from ten to fifteen houſes worth (excluſive of lands) five or ſix hundred thouſand crowns. But many poſſeſs from one to three hundred thouſand: and yet more, whoſe capital does not exceed fifty or one hundred thouſand.

Peru.

Within the Viceroyalty of Peru, are included thoſe vaſt countries, which are arranged under the audiences of Lima, Los Charcas, and Chili; within which are comprehended the governments of Santa Cruz, Paraguay, Tucuman, and Buenos Ayres. Theſe three provinces, and Chili, have particular Governors, abſolute in both political, civil, and military affairs; but yet are ſubordinate in ſome reſpects to the Viceroy of Peru, whoſe juriſdiction extends from the Bay of Guayaquil, in three degrees, twenty-five minutes, ſouth latitude; and reaches to the land of Magellan, in fifty degrees, or 1012 ſea leagues. To the eaſt it is bounded by Braſil.

In the audience of Lima, are the following juriſdictions.

II.

Digitized by Google

I. II. III. Lima, Chancay, and Santa described already.

IV. Canta, the Cordillera of the Andes, is partly included in this, which gives a variety to the climate; the lower points are hot; but as you rise on the hills, the temperature cools as you advance. The farmers find the advantage of this; for by adopting every plant to its proper climate, all are well cultivated, and the produce very considerable. The immense tracts of Bombon being high are cold, and yield support to innumerable flocks of sheep. The landlords of them are noble families at Lima.

V. Canete extends along the coast, the climate being the same as that of the vallies of Lima: being well watered by rivers and streams, the products are very considerable in wheat and maize. Sugar-canes are also planted in great quantities. Near Chilca they find much saltpetre, from which gunpowder is made.

VI. Ica, Pisco, and Nasca, three towns, give the name to another jurisdiction, which is fertile where the sand is watered. Other parts are planted with vines, from which much wine is made and exported to Callao, and from thence to Guayaquil and Panama. Olives abound here; and where the trenches are cut for watering, great plenty of wheat, maize, and fruits, are produced. In Ica are great woods of Algarrobale-trees, upon the produce of which the people feed many asses they employ in agriculture.

VII. Guarachiri extends into the mountains, where are several silver-mines, but few of which are wrought. The parts of this district that are plain are well inhabited, and very fertile in yielding great quantities of fruit, wheat, barley, maize, and other grain.

VIII. Guanuco

Digitized by Google

VIII. Guanuco, with a capital of the ſame name, once a town of great importance, but now almoſt in ruins. Moſt of the territory enjoys a very pure and mild air, and a fruitful ſoil.

IX. Yauyos extends to the mountains, and conſequently poſſeſſes a variety of climate. It in general abounds in fruits, and all ſorts of corn; and the reſt is cloathed with a fine verdure, feeding great herds and flocks for the markets of Lima.

X. Caxatambo likewiſe reaches into the mountains, from which vicinity, the temperature of the air is different. The whole of it is very productive of grain: There are ſome ſilver mines alſo, that are worked; and its Indian inhabitants are manufacturers of baize.

XI. Tarma is one of the moſt extenſive. The parts of this juriſdiction that enjoy a temperate climate yield much wheat, barley, maize, and other grain; and the colder parts are covered with great herds of cattle and ſheep. It alſo abounds in rich ſilver-mines that are worked, and which much enrich the country. The Indians carry on ſome manufacturies.

XII. Jauxa includes many extenſive plains between the two Cordilleras of the Andes. There are in it many well-built towns. The ſoil is in general very fertile in fruits and grain; and being the great road to the more ſouthern provinces, it enjoys a conſiderable commerce.

XIII. Conchucos varies in climate from part of it being mountainous: the lower parts are adapted to tillage, and the higher feed many cattle and ſheep. The Indians of this juriſdicton carry on conſiderable manufactures of wool.

XIV. Guaylas reſembles in ſituation, climate, and products the laſt.

XV. Gua-

Digitized by Google

XV. Guamalies: this alſo is a mountainous province, and from the coldneſs of the climate is principally applied to ſupporting cattle.

In the dioceſs of Truxillo are the following, beſides others already deſcribed.

I. Caxamarca, an exceedingly fertile juriſdiction in all kinds of corn, fruits, and eſculent vegetables; ſupporting likewiſe great numbers of cattle, ſheep, and eſpecially hogs; theſe they ſell to the farmers in the valleys, who fatten them with maize, and ſend them to the markets in the great towns. The Indians have conſiderable manufactures of cotton.

II. Chachapoyas, being free from the Cordilleras, has a hot climate: it is of great extent, and but thinly inhabited. The Indians manufacture very beautiful tapeſtry, and alſo ſome ſail-cloth.

III. Llulla and Chilolas ſituated low, and therefore warm and moiſt, much covered with woods, and little inhabited. The principal product is tobacco.

IV. Pataz is various in the face of the country, and proportionably ſo in products. It is chiefly remarkable for its gold mines.

In the dioceſs of Guamanga the following:

I. Guamanga with a capital of the ſame name, a large town with above twenty noble inhabitants, and a very ſplendid cathedral, with ſeveral convents, &c. The juriſdiction enjoys in general ſo good an air, that it is very populous, and the ſoil is fruitful.

II. Guanta likewiſe poſſeſſes a moſt temperate air and fertile ſoil. It was formerly rich in ſilver mines, but they are now exhauſted.

III. Vilcas Guaman, the greateſt part lies in a temperate air, and beſides producing plentifully all ſorts of grain, &c. ſupports immenſe quantities of cattle. The Indians employ themſelves in weaving woollen ſtuffs.

IV. An-

Digitized by Google

IV. Andaguaylas extends between the Cordilleras: part of it being low has a hot climate, but the ſoil being watered, is rendered very fertile in grain, particularly wheat, maize, and ſugar-canes. It is one of the moſt populous provinces in all theſe parts.

V. Guanca Belica has a capital of the ſame name, which owes its being to a rich quick-ſilver mine, which ſupplies all Peru.

VI. Angaraes, having a very temperate air, is fertile, in corn, and breeds vaſt quantities of cattle.

VII. Caſtro Virreyna: the climate is ſo various, that it produces every kind of grain and fruit; the heaths, which are the coldeſt parts, are fed by the Vicunna ſheep, whoſe wool is ſo famous in many manufactures; but theſe valuable flocks are wild, inhabit only cold places and mountain-tops, nor are they caught without great difficulty.

VIII. Parina-Cocha, of which the air is ſo temperate, that it abounds with all the products common to fine mild climates, particularly all ſorts of grain, fine fruits, and excellent paſtures. It has ſeveral mines of gold and ſilver.

IX. Lucanas, of a cold and moderate climate; the parts of the firſt breed great herds of cattle, and the latter yield plenty of grain and fruits; but its chief wealth reſults from valuable ſilver-mines.

In the dioceſs of Cuſco.

I. Cuſco, the city of the ſame name, is the moſt ancient of any in Peru, being of the ſame date with the eaſtern empire of the Yncas. It was founded by Mango Capac. From a low beginning of cottages it roſe to ſo much ſplendor, that when the Spaniards firſt came, they were aſtoniſhed at the largeneſs of the city, the magnificence of the temple of the ſun, the grandeur of the palaces of the Ynca, and the general pomp and wealth of the whole capital. On a mountain contiguous to the north part of the city,

Digitized by Google

are the remains of one of the greateſt works of the Yncas; that mountain they had partly incloſed with a prodigious wall, and deſigned to have completed it, by way of a fort for their defence. It was all of free-ſtone, and erected with great ſtrength and ſolidity. The ſtones, which form the principal part of the work, are of ſuch immenſe magnitude, that one can ſcarcely believe it poſſible, that the mere force of men, unaſſiſted by machines, could have brought them from the quarries. The interſtices between thoſe enormous maſſes, are filled with ſmaller ſtones, and ſo nicely joined, that they are not to be perceived without cloſe attention. One of the largeſt now lies on the ground, and ſeems not to have been uſed; this is ſuch an enormous maſs, that it is amazing how it could be brought hither. It is called la Canſada, or the Troubleſome: the internal walls and apartments are in ruins, but the outer one is ſtanding.

Cuſco is nearly equal to Lima. The houſes are built of ſtone, and covered with red tiles of a lively appearance. The apartments are in general ſpacious, and finely decorated, the inhabitants being much given to expence in their houſes. The cathedral, though ſmaller, much reſembles that of Lima.

The climate of the juriſdiction is various, part of it very cold, and part temperate: the former does exceedingly well for cattle, and the latter is cultivated for corn and fruits.

II. Quiſpicanchi yields plenty of wheat, maize, &c. Alſo coca; here are manufactures of woollen ſtuffs.

III. Avancay, of a various climate, but in general hot, and accordingly it abounds with plantations of canes, which yield rich ſugar.

IV. Pan-

Digitized by Google

IV. Paucartambo, containing in general a very fertile soil. It was famous in the time of the Yncas for coca.

V. Calcaylares. The air excels that of all the other provinces, and the advantage of so great a blessing, is seen in the uncommon exuberance of all the productions of the earth. In the hottest part, called Lares, were formerly large plantations of sugar; but for want of hands to cultivate them, they are much diminished: instead of yielding as formerly sixty or eighty thousand arobas, they are fallen to less than thirty thousand; but so superior is the sugar, that without any other preparation than that of the planters, it is equal both in colour and hardness to the refined sugar of Europe.

VI. Chilques and Masques, the whole of which is very fertile, either in grain or pasturage for cattle.

VII. Cotabamba, abounding with great plenty of all sorts of cattle, and yielding much wheat, barley, maize, &c. It abounds also with gold and silver-mines, but they are not so rich as formerly.

VIII. Canas and Canches: the Cordillera runs into this jurisdiction, and forms two climates, the one adapted to cattle, the other to corn, and in the meadows between the eminences, are fed thirty thousand mules.

IX. Aymaraes, abounding with sugar, cattle, and grain; also in mines of gold and silver, but not so productive as formerly.

X. Chumbi Vilcas, much resembling the last.

XI. Lampa, the principal of all those included under the name of Callao. The quantity of cattle it breeds and supports, is very great. It has also silver-mines.

XII. Carabaya, most of which is cold, but the vales are hot enough to produce coca, and yield all sorts of grain and fruits abundantly. The mines of silver and gold are very rich. In 1713 was disco-

Digitized by Google

vered in the mountain Ucuntaya, a ſtratum of ſolid ſilver, which, though ſoon exhauſted, yielded ſeveral millions. The gold-mine called Aparama, is famous for its richneſs.

XIII. Aſangaro and Aſilo, from the coldneſs of the climate, is chiefly employed in breeding cattle.

XIV. Apolo Bamba conſiſts of ſeven towns of newly-converted Indians.

In the dioceſs of Arequipa.

I. Arequipa, the capital of which is of the ſame name, one of the largeſt cities in all Peru, moſt pleaſingly ſituated in a plain, the houſes well built, and generally of ſtone: they are lofty, and handſomely decorated both without and within. Nothing can exceed the agreeableneſs of the climate: the cold is not great, nor the heat troubleſome, hence are the fields ever cloathed with verdure, and enamelled with flowers. The healthineſs of the place is likewiſe added to by the cleanlineſs of the inhabitants, canals through the ſtreets carry off all the filth to a neighbouring river. All theſe circumſtances, ſo favourable to the place, are however lowered by the dreadful earthquakes it experiences in common with the reſt of the country; it has been four times ruined by them: it is very populous. The juriſdiction of the ſame name is covered with cultivation, it produces abundance of corn and fruits, and the excellence of its paſtures is ſeen in the number of cattle which they feed.

II. Camana, extends on one ſide to the ſea, and on the other to the Cordillera, and contains many deſerts. It has ſome ſilver-mines; but its principal trade is in aſſes.

III. Condeſuyos. In this diſtrict, is bred the wild cochineal, which the Indians export to the provinces, where there are woollen manufactures. They grind it to powder, and mix four ounces of it with twelve of violet maize, form it into ſquare cakes, which

Digitized by Google

which they call Magno, and ſell it a dollar a pound.

IV. Caylloma chiefly noted for ſilver-mines in a mountain of the ſame name. Though they have been long worked with great ſucceſs, yet are they ſtill ſo productive, that the King has an office there for his fifth, and vending quickſilver. The air is in general ſo cold, that all fruits, &c. come from other provinces.

V. Monquegua, the climate of which is perfectly mild and agreeable. Here are large vineyards, the wine and brandy of which are the chief exports. It yields alſo papas and olives.

VI. Arica, which is ſituated low, and has a hot and unwholeſome climate; the ſoil is alſo ſo barren, that it yields little beſides Guinea-pepper: the quantity however of that commodity is very great, and the conſumption of it in all South America ſuch, that a market will never be wanting for it. The plantations of it here, yields ſixty thouſand dollars per annum.

Audience of Charcas.

This province is as large as that of Lima, but by no means ſo agreeable in climate, ſo fertile in ſoil, or ſo populous. It contains the archbiſhoprick of La Plata, a conſiderable city, ſo called from the mines called Porco near it. The climate is very mild and regular. The buildings are in general good, and the houſes have moſt of them very agreeable gardens, planted with the fruits of Europe. The number of people amount to fourteen thouſand. Two leagues from it is the river Cachimayo, which yields, among a variety of delicious fiſh, one called Dorado, weighing from twenty to twenty-five pounds. The juriſdictions are,

Digitized by Google

I. La Plata, includes the mountain Potosi, at the foot of which is a town of the same name. These mines which have continued to enrich the world for ages, were discovered by accident in 1545. An Indian pursuing a goat up the mountain, in order to secure himself on a declivity, laid hold of a shrub, but it came up by the roots, and laid open a mass of fine silver: the wealth which this discovery suddenly poured upon the Indian betrayed the secret to his friends, and they soon to the Spaniards, so that the mine was soon worked to prodigious advantage. The first mine was called the Discovery. In a few days another was found, called the Tin-mine. Then another called Rica, which much exceeded the rest; and lastly the Mendieta: these are the principal mines of Potosi. The wealth of the mountain soon founded the town. The neighbouring country is remarkably barren, producing neither corn, fruits, or herbs: silver however procures them all, so that no place in all Peru is better supplied.

Barba, parish-priest of Potosi in 1637, says, that from 1574, when mercury was first used here, the royal office had received two hundred and four thousand seven hundred quintals of mercury, exclusive of the great clandestine import: the annual consumption was therefore three thousand two hundred and forty-nine quintals. Escalom in another work declares, that before 1638, it appeared by the publick accounts, that the produce of the silver amounted to three hundred and ninety-five million six hundred and nineteen thousand dollars, which in ninety-three years, the time it had then been discovered, amounted to forty-one millions two hundred and fifty-five thousand and forty-three dollars per annum. From hence may be conceived the wealth of the mountain; and though it has not of late been so productive as formerly, yet is it still exceedingly considerable.

II. To-

Digitized by Google

II. Tomina. The climate is generally hot, yet in ſome parts it has vineyards; and in others ſugar-plantations: there are many cattle and ſheep alſo bred in it.

III. Porco; the cold climate of which agrees well with cattle, but corn and fruits are produced in very ſmall quantities in it. From the mountain of the ſame name, the Yncas dug all their ſilver, and was the firſt mine worked by the Spaniards.

IV. Tarija: the climate of which is various; it every where abounds with mines of gold and ſilver.

V. Lipes. The air here is very cold, cattle is therefore the chief product, and principally the Vicuna, Alpaca, and the Llama: they are found however in all the provinces of Peru, whoſe height is ſuch as to make the air cold. Many gold mines have been worked in this juriſdiction, but now diſcontinued.

VI. Amparaes; barley and numerous herds of cattle, are the chief products.

VII. Oruro, the climate of which is too cold for corn, or other cultivated vegetables, but it abounds much in cattle, and among them the animals peculiar to the country. There are the remains of many mines not now worked.

VIII. Pilaya, abounds ſo much with vineyards, that it carries on a very lucrative commerce in wine with other provinces. It yields alſo plenty of corn and fruit.

IX. Cochabamba. The capital is one of the richeſt and moſt populous places in all Peru, ſituated in the midſt of a fertile plain; and the whole province is ſo interſected by ſtreams and rivers, that it is rendered fertile almoſt every where.

X. Chayanta, famous for both gold and ſilver-mines.

XI. Paria; the air of which is too cold for grain, but the quantity of cattle is very great: much cheeſe

Digitized by Google

is made here, both from cows and ſheeps milk, which is eſteemed greatly all over Peru.

XII. Carangas: the climate of this province is alſo ſo cold, that cattle principally abounds; but it is very famous for its mines, which are conſtantly worked: Silver is dug here in the barren, ſandy deſerts, on the ſea coaſt: they find only by digging in the ſands detatched lumps of ſilver, not mixed with any ore or ſtone: they are called Papas, from being taken up like thoſe roots. It is exceedingly difficult to account for the formation of ſuch pieces of ſilver; unleſs we admit what can hardly be diſputed, viz. the continual reproduction of metals: the matrices of gold and ſilver in Peru are great proofs of it; and the very mines themſelves, after being long forſaken, are worked again; but the ſkeletons of Indians, found in old mines, and covered with fibres of ſilver, and the inward parts full of the ſame metal, ſeem to put the matter beyond diſpute. If this is admitted, it follows, that ſilver was once a fluid, which, after acquiring certain qualities, is filtrated through the pores of the ſand, till it ſtops in a ſtratum proper for its fixation, where it forms a ſolid congeries.

XIII. Ciacica; in the hotter parts of which great quantities of coca are produced, and a trade carried on in it. The colder parts feed much cattle, and abound in the wild ſorts mentioned before.

XIV. Attacama lies on the frontiers of Chili: the climate is various.

In the dioceſe of La Paz.

I. La Paz, the capital of the ſame name, is a middling ſize. The juriſdiction varies in climate; ſome parts produce ſugar-canes, coca, maize, &c. while others chiefly ſupport cattle.

II. Omaſuyos; from the coldneſs of the air it produces little grain, but abounds greatly in cattle.

III. Pacajes: It is very rich in ſilver-mines; many of which were worked in the time of the Yncas.

Digitized by Google

Yncas. In the mountains are mines of gems; and a rich one of emeralds, though not worked.

IV. Laricaxas abounds much in gold-mines, of an extraordinary fine quality.

V. Chucuito is of a very cold climate, ſo that little of it is cultivated; the inhabitants are ſupported by cattle, the fleſh of which they dry and ſalt. All the mountains abound in ſilver, but the mines are neglected. Here is the great lake, Titi-caca, eighty leagues in circumferance, into which ten or twelve large rivers, and many ſtreams empty themſelves. On an iſland in this lake, the founder of the Empire of Peru invented his famous fable of the ſun, and levelled a mountain which was on it to erect a temple to that luminary, one of the moſt ſplendid in the whole empire: Its walls were covered with plates of gold and ſilver; and in its collection of offerings, were all manner of riches; great quantities of which were thrown into the lake by the Indians, when they ſaw the inſatiable avarice of the Spaniards. Over the river Deſaguadero (near this lake) which is eighty or one hundred yards in breadth, and flows with a moſt impetuous current, Capac Yupanqui, the fifth Ynca made a bridge of ruſhes for the paſſage of his army to conquer the provinces to the South; he firſt fixed very large cables, made of a kind of graſs common in this country; and then laid on them faſcines of ruſhes: it is five yards broad, and has ever ſince been kept in repair by the neighbouring provinces; firſt by order of the Yncas, and ſince by that of the Kings of Spain.

VI. Paucar Colla yields little corn, but plenty of cattle. The Indians have ſome woollen manufactures. There are many ſilver-mines, but few are worked.

In the dioceſs of Santa Cruz, the principal juriſdiction is of the ſame name. Though the climate is hot, yet it is fertile in vineyards; and the vale in

Digitized by Google

which the principal town ſtands, is cultivated for all ſorts of vegetables. The heaths and mountains yield plenty of honey and wax.

The Dioceſs of El Tucuman lies to the ſouth of the River Plata, and borders on Paraguay, and Buenos Ayres. Much the greateſt part of it is covered with impenetrable foreſts. Such parts as are watered by rivers and ſtreams, are exceedingly fertile in ſugar, corn, fruits and cotton; the laſt is formed into manufactures. Amazing numbers of mules are bred in the beſt paſtures, and ſent all over Peru; as they much exceed thoſe of other diſtricts.

In the Dioceſs of Paraguay is included the great country, known under that name. The only ſettlements are, the City of Aſſumption, Villa Rica, and ſome other towns, inhabited by a mixture of Spaniards, Meſtizos, and Indians: The miſſions include thirty or forty thouſand people. The air of this country is in general moiſt and temperate; but in ſome parts it is rather cold. It abounds very plentifully with proviſions. Cotton thrives ſo well, and is raiſed in ſuch quantities, that every little village has large plantations, which they work into ſtuffs for exportation: Tobacco is alſo planted largely; but the principal article of their cultivation is the Paraguay tea-herb; in which ſingle article a very flouriſhing commerce is carried on.

[*The author here gives an account of the eſtabliſhments of the Jeſuits; but as every thing in that government is reverſed, by the deſtruction of the Society, the account is no longer intereſting.*]

The Dioceſs of Buenos Ayres has a capital of the ſame name, ſo called from the uncommon healthineſs of the air: It is ſituated in a large plain, riſing gently from the river. It has three thouſand houſes: The ſtreets are ſtraight and broad: there is always a garriſon of a thouſand regular troops. The cathe-

dral

dral is large and well built; and there are several convents. The climate very much resembles that of Spain; the distinctions between the seasons being the same; but in winter they have heavy storms and great rains, with violent tempests of thunder and lightning. The plain around the city is very extensive, and uninterrupted; generally consisting of fine pastures, which feed such immense herds of cattle, that no place in either Europe or America has a greater plenty of better meat: Indeed cattle and horses have multiplied so greatly, that the skins are the greatest value; the price of a horse not exceeding a dollar, and a beast chosen out of a herd of two or three hundred, only four rials: Game and fish are equally plentiful; and both American and European fruits come to full perfection. In a word, for all the enjoyments of life, in a fine and healthy climate, no country in the world exceeds this. Ships of size cannot come up to the town; they therefore anchor in two bays, on the coasts of Maldonado and Montevideo.

Within this government are three other cities, Santa Fè, Las Corientes, and Monte Video.

Return to Quito.

During our residence at Lima, our time was employed in executing the Viceroy's orders for putting the coast into a state of defence, that in case Commodore Anson's squadron should make any attack, a vigorous resistance might be made. This being executed, we obtained leave to return to Quito upon the business which we had come from Europe for. The 8th of August, 1741, we embarked at Callao, and the 15th anchored at Paita. We set out directly for Guayaquil, and arrived at Quito the 5th of September. Paita is in latitude five degrees five minutes

nutes ſouth. The ſoil around it is wholly of ſand and extremely barren.

On our arrival at Quito we joined our French companions. M. Godin had finiſhed the aſtronomical obſervations to the northward, which were re-examined for the greater degree of accuracy by Meſſieurs Bouguer, and De la Condamine. While M. Berguin applied himſelf, with the utmoſt ſkill and labour, to draw maps of the country, M. De la Condamine erected two obeliſks at the extremities of the baſe of Yaruqui as monuments of the tranſaction, the inſcriptions on which were not ſettled till after the return to Spain, when a Latin one was ordered over by the Marquis de la Enſenada, Secretary of State in 1746. We were in expectations of finiſhing our work ſoon, when, on the 5th of December 1741, news arrived at Quito of Mr. Anſon having pillaged and burnt Paita. We were ſummoned to Guayaquil immediately to ſecure that city. We therefore left Quito the 16th of December, and got to Guayaquil the 24th, where having performed what was requiſite for the defence of the place, Don George ſtaid as Commandant, and I had leave to return to Quito. Jan. 5th 1742, I ſet out, and got to Quito the 19th, but I was ſcarce off my mule when a new expreſs arrived from the Viceroy, ordering us to Lima with all poſſible expedition. The 22d I ſet out again, and reached Lima the 26th of February.

The Viceroy had ordered two frigates to be prepared for ſecuring the coaſt of Chili, the command of one, the De Belen, he gave to Don George, and the other, the Roſa, to me. They were between ſix and ſeven hundred tons each, carried thirty guns on one deck, and three hundred and fifty men. Dec. 4th, we got under ſail, and Jan. 17th, 1743, we made Juan Fernandes. Theſe iſlands, which belong to Chili, are two in number: the chief is three

Digitized by Google

three or four leagues in length: for the moſt part it is high land, but has ſome plains. The valleys are full of excellent timber. The plains and ſmall hills produce a ſort of ſtraw reſembling oats, and growing higher than the uſual ſtature of a man. It abounds with dogs of the greyhound kind, and alſo many goats, who inhabit crags and precipices, where no other animal can live. There are mountains in it of a great height. It produces none of the American fruit-trees, owing to the coldneſs of the ſouth winds, which make even the ſummer very temperate. It has three bays: but the anchorage is bad, and in winter no ſhip can lay there with ſafety. The other iſland, Afuera, is every where prodigious high land, and the ſhores ſo ſteep and craggy that there is no convenient landing-place. It is remarkable that the dogs of Juan Fernandes never bark: we caught ſome of them, and it was not till they learned of other dogs that they attempted it.

Both the iſlands abound greatly in fiſh of ſeveral kinds, one ſort is a cod nearly like that of Newfoundland. The abundance of ſeveral ſorts is ſo great that two hours fiſhing in the morning, and as many in the evening, with only ſix or eight nets, procured, not only a ſufficiency for all the ſhips company, but much remained to ſalt; and in general the ſorts are excellent. The lobſters are often half a yard in length, and of an exquiſite taſte.

We anchored here till the 22d of January, during which time we reconnoitered every part of it, and eſpecially the place where the Engliſh had erected their tents. Sailing from thence, we made the iſland of Santa Maria the 5th of February, and ſoon after anchored in the bay of Conception in the kingdom of Chili. The city of the ſame name is built on the ſhore of a beautiful bay. The place in extent is but ſmall, nor are the buildings at all remarka-

Digitized by Google

remarkable. The whole country around it is full of ſeats, farms and cottages.

The climate here reſembles that of a conſiderable part of Europe. The winter is ſomething colder than in the ſouthern provinces of Spain, but milder than thoſe of the northward, and the ſummer-heats proportionable. Moſt of the juriſdiction is formed of extenſive plains, the Cordilleras being conſiderably to the eaſtward.

How juſtly the climate may be compared to that of Spain is ſeen in the ſimilarity of the products, though in point of their goodneſs they are remarkably better than thoſe of Spain. Indeed the moſt ſouthern parts are too cold for ſugar-canes, oranges, and lemons, nor is it well adapted to olives, though ſome are produced. But ſuch productions as are cultivated in the center of Spain are here produced in a plenty that is amazing; wheat and other grain generally producing an hundred-fold. At Talcaguana on the ſea-coaſt I ſaw in a garden, among ſeveral ſtalks of wheat that had grown there without culture, one whoſe ſtem was not above a foot high, but from its knots there afterwards ſprung ſo many ſtalks as produced thirty-four ears, the largeſt of which were near three inches in length, and the leaſt not leſs than two. This ſpecies is called *Triticum ſpica multicipli*, and is cultivated in Italy and Sicily.

The quantity of wheat in Chili is ſufficiently ſhewn in the lowneſs of the price, a meaſure, weighing ſix arobas and ſix pounds, being commonly ſold at eight or ten rials; but for want of a market little more is ſown than is neceſſary for home-conſumption, ſo that much the greateſt part of theſe noble fertile plains lie waſte.

The vines of many ſorts are as productive as the wheat, and, for the flavour of the grape, preferred to any in Peru. A muſcadel is made here much exceeding

Digitized by Google

exceeding any in Spain. The vines are trained in eſpaliers; but as it is with wheat, ſo is it with vineyards, for want of a demand, where there is one acre planted there might be a thouſand.

Theſe extenſive and rich plains are chiefly adapted to the fattening of oxen, goats, and ſheep, and is the only general employment of all ranks of the people. When the herds are ſufficiently fat, each farm has a general ſlaughter, when four or five hundred, according to the ſize of it, are killed. They melt the tallow into a lard, and dry the fleſh in the ſmoke; but the greateſt profit is made by the hide and the tallow.

The beaſts are ſo exceedingly plentiful, that a fat one ready to be killed may be bought for four dollars: indeed, ſuch is the natural advantages of this kingdom, that if the people were as induſtrious as nature is bountiful, this country would be the richeſt in America.

The method of ſlaughtering the cattle is one of their chief diverſions. Thoſe to be killed are drove into an incloſure. At the gate of it are the Guaſos on horſeback with ſpears of ſome length, having at one end a ſharp piece of ſteel. Upon the gate being opened a beaſt is turned out, and a Guaſo purſuing it hamſtrings it in both legs without checking his horſe; then alighting, he kills the beaſt, ſkins it, and takes out the tallow, and wrapping it in the hide takes it on his horſe to the farm, returning again for the fleſh. In this manner he goes on till all the beaſts are ſlaughtered, which is in quickneſs proportioned to the number of Guaſos. Their dexterity is very great, for if a beaſt is too ſwift for his horſe, he then has recourſe to his nooſe, which he throws over his head or his fore-legs, and, twiſting the other end round a tree, preſently diſpatches him.

They

They tan the hides and make an excellent leather of them, particularly for ſoles of ſhoes. Goats are alſo killed in great numbers, and the Cordovan leather made of their hides is the beſt in all Peru.

It is not only in cattle and corn that the aſtoniſhing plenty of this country is ſeen: turkies, geeſe, and all ſorts of poultry are bred over the whole country without care or expence in uncommon abundance. Wild-fowl, woodpidgeons, turtle-doves, partridges, ſnipes, woodcocks, and royal cirapicos, are all to be found in equal exuberance. And to add to the happineſs of the country, theſe bleſſings are unaccompanied with troubleſome inſects or venomous reptiles.

The fruits are of the ſame ſorts as thoſe of Europe. The cherries are large and fine. They have two ſorts of ſtrawberries: the frutilla is almoſt as large as a hen's egg; the other is like that of Spain, and grows wild. They have a plant which they call Panque, which is very abundant throughout the country, and of which they make an excellent tan for their leather.

There are many mines of lapis lazuli, loadſtone, and copper, with ſeveral of gold; but the people attend to nothing but the plenty they live in from the ſurface of the earth. The horſes and mules of this country are more famous than any others in America, and better even than thoſe of Spain, from whence they were originally carried.

The bay of Conception is the principal place of trade on the coaſt. The country in the neighbourhood of it is remarkable for a ſtratum of ſhells found at the depth of half a yard, being two or three toiſes thick. They are of different ſorts, and without any mixture of earth. They have no other lime for building than what is burnt of theſe ſhells. It is not only in low places that theſe quarries

Digitized by Google

ries of ſhells are found, but on the tops of mountains fifty toiſes above the ſea.

The city of Santiago is the capital of Chili, ſituated in latitude thirty-three degrees forty minutes ſouth, twenty leagues from the harbour of Valparaiſo. Nothing can exceed the convenience and agreeableneſs of its ſituation, being in the middle of a fine plain, of above twenty leagues extent, watered by a fine river. The ſtreets are ſtrait and well built. The inhabitants amount to four thouſand families.

The kingdom of Chili extends from the frontiers of Peru to the ſtreights of Magellan, being five hundred and thirty leagues in length. To the eaſt it is bounded by the Pampas, or immenſe level plains, which part it from Paraguay and Buenos Ayres. It is divided into the four governments of I. Chili. II. Valparaiſo. III. Valdivia. IV. Chiloe.

In the firſt are the following juriſdictions:

I. Santiago, limited to the bounds of that city.

II. Rancagua, without any town or even village, the people living quite detached in ſingle cottages.

III. Colchagua reſembles the laſt, but is better peopled.

IV. Chillan contains nothing particular.

V. Aconcagua, famous for a valley of the ſame name, of a moſt agreeable climate and fertile ſoil.

VI. Melipilla.

VII. Quillota.

VIII. Coquimbo has a capital of the ſame name, ſituated delightfully near the ſea, and in a fine plain, covered with fields of different ſorts of corn, and with woods of a pleaſing verdure. The place is large, but has not above four or five hundred families in it. The ſtreets are ſtrait and broad, but the houſes are built of mud-walls covered with leaves. Every houſe has a good garden, well planted with

the

Digitized by Google

the fruits and vegetables of Old and New Spain, to both which the remarkable ſerenity of the climate does exceedingly well.

IX. Copiago has a town of the ſame name, with three or four hundred families.

X. Mendoſa; the town of which name contains one hundred families, and is like Coquimbo, full of well-watered and well-cultivated gardens.

Commerce.

The trade of Chili ariſes from the exuberant products of the earth. Its hills, dales, and plains, in a word every ſpot of the ground is really an object of admiration; corn of all ſorts, wine, cattle, and leather, are yielded in ſuch an amazing abundance, There are annually ſent from Santiago to Callao one hundred and forty thouſand tanegas of wheat, each weighing one hundred and fifty-ſix pounds; about eight thouſand quintals of cordage, and between ſixteen and twenty thouſand quintals of tallow, beſides ſole-leather, nuts, filberts, figs, pears, and apples, beſides dried meat and tongues in great quantities.

The northern parts of the kingdom, about Coquimbo, produce olives, of which the oil is better than any in Peru, but is yet moſtly conſumed at home.

Beſides this commerce in proviſions, Chili has another in the precious metals. The moſt famous gold-mine is that of Petorca, which has been worked as long as any in Peru. The gold of all the mines, which are numerous, is bought up in the country and ſent to Lima to be coined, and the amount is about ſix hundred thouſand dollars a year, beſides four hundred thouſand more which go clandeſtinely by the Cordillera. Near Coquimbo are mines of copper which ſupply all Chili and Peru.

In

Digitized by Google

In return for these exports Chili receives from Peru iron, cloth, and linen, hats, and bays, sugar, cocoa, sweatmeats, pickles, tobacco, oil, earthenware, and all sorts of European goods. They have likewise a small commerce with Paraguay and Buenos Ayres, by which way they receive their negroes. They have also some trade with the wild Indians, to whom they sell hard-ware, as bits, spurs, edge-tools; also toys and wine, which are paid for by horses, cattle, and children, which the Indians very readily give in exchange for the commodities they want: but, notwithstanding this piece of barbarity, they are in all their bargains truly punctual, and irreproachably just.

All the Indians of Auraco, Tucapel, and others to the banks of the river Biobio, and all who live near the Cordillera have persisted in being free from the Spanish government: when attacked, they retire into the boundless country that adjoins them, and, uniting with other tribes, come back strong enough to recover their country. Their wars against the Spaniards are managed with such secrecy and address, that the first notice of the design is the murder of all that they surprise: and from their ease and agility in moving from one part of the country to another, it is exceedingly difficult to have any part of the frontier secured from their attacks. When they are tired of the war, and the Spaniards ask for peace, they hold a congress, in which the terms are settled. The last war was in 1723.

Voyage to Valparaiso, &c.

Learning at Talcaguana, where the ships were at anchor, that Commodore Don Pizarro intended to set out for Valparaiso, to hoist his flag on board the Esperanza, we put to sea the 6th of February, and steered for that place: the 20th we made the island of

Digitized by Google

of Juan Fernandes, and the 24th anchored at Valparaiſo, a port of ſome trade; there being great quantities of wheat ſhipped at it. Nothing can exceed the fineneſs of the climate here, or the beauties and richneſs of the fruits. They abound greatly alſo in game: the plenty of partridges is ſuch, that the Santiago muleteers knock them down with ſticks, without going out of the road.

The buſineſs of the ſquadron being that of cruizing on the coaſt, we ſeveral times viſited the Iſland of Juan Fernandes, till the 24th of June, 1743, when we ſailed our courſe for Callao, entering that port the 6th of July; and from thence the Commodore ſet out for Lima: There I aſked the Viceroy's leave for us to return to our principal work at Quito. The 27th of January, 1744, I reached that city, and we proſecuted our obſervations with ſo much diligence, as ſoon to complete them.

We now deliberated on our return to Spain, which we determined to do on board ſome French ſhips, which were ſoon to ſail by the way of Cape Horn: we preferred this as the moſt ſecure, the ſhips of that nation being neutral in the preſent war.

Voyage to Europe.

On our return to Lima, finding that two French frigates, Notre Dame de la Delivrance, and the Lys, lying at Callao, were ſoon to ſail; Don Juan and myſelf agreed for our paſſage, and in ſeparate ſhips, that one might eſcape the dangers of ſo long a voyage, if the other was loſt. We embarked on the 22d of October 1744, and the ſame day ſteered for Chili. The 11th of November, the ſhips ſeparated: we met in the Bay of Conception, and were joined by two other French ſhips. January 27th, we all put to ſea again, and the 8th of April we weathered both Cape Horn, and Staten Land. Having ſprung ſeveral

Digitized by Google

ſeveral leaks, by the 17th the water had increaſed in our ſhip ſo much, that the men were quite exhauſted by pumping. By the 25th we had thoughts of quitting her, which would have been done ſome days before, but for her valuable cargo, having above two millions of Peruvian dollars, one and a half of which was in gold and ſilver. The 8th of May we were in the latitude of ſixteen degrees, fifty-eight minutes. The 21ſt we all came to an anchor in the Iſle of Fernando de Norona. We imagined that iſle to have been deſert, but were agreeably ſurprized to ſee two forts with the Portugueſe flag flying. There are two harbours here capable of receiving ſhips of any burthen, but from ſeveral circumſtances of expoſition, rocks, &c. is a ſafe retreat only at certain ſeaſons. The French Eaſt India company finding it left deſolate, formed a ſettlement on it, for their India ſhips to touch at; but the Portugueſe, being jealous of their vicinity to Brazil, obliged them to quit it, and they have ſince fortified it with no leſs than ſeven forts built of ſtone, for commanding the harbours and landing-places, which are well provided with large artillery. It is in the government of Fernambuco, from whence it is ſupplied with proviſions and neceſſaries. The common food of the inhabitants here, and throughout all Brazil, is the farina de Pau, or wood-meal, which is eaten inſtead of bread. It is made of the root moniato or manioc. The latitude of the iſland is three degrees fifty-three minutes ſouth; and it is ſixty or eighty leagues from the coaſt of Brazil.

Upon the Captains ſending in an account of their ſhips and deſtination, they had a very polite reception from the Governor, who gave all the neceſſary orders for their being ſupplied with wood, water, and whatever they wanted: but nobody ever went on ſhore without ſoldiers to attend them, who never quitted them, and would allow of no other

Digitized by Google

walk, than that to the principal fort, where the Governor resides. On our arrival, our first care was to repair the Delivrance; but she was in such bad condition, that we did not attempt to do it thoroughly, only enough to lessen the great fatigue of pumping. Having taken in the necessary wood and water, with some calves and hogs, we put to sea the 10th of June.

The 21st of July we discovered two sail, who upon coming up fired a shot, and hoisted English colours: our frigates formed a line, but we were in little condition for fighting, being weakly manned, and in great want of arms and ammunition. The smallest of the English ships bore down, and fired several shot, to oblige us to hoist our colours, at which a fire of great guns and musquetry began, and very soon we were within pistol-shot of each other.

The force of the French frigates was this: the Louis Erasme twenty guns, seventy men; the Marquis d'Antin twenty guns, fifty men; the Delivrance fourteen guns, fifty-one men. The enemy was considerably superior. The Prince Frederick privateer, Captain Talbot, thirty guns, twelve pounders; and the Duke twenty guns, twelve pounders; and we concluded from their fire, that they had upwards of four hundred men on board: the fight was maintained with great resolution and alacrity on both sides. At length the Marquis D'Antin struck to the largest of the enemy, after losing her brave Captain. The Delivrance seeing this, prudently crowded sail to escape: the Louis Erasme did the same, but the largest of the English privateers presently came up with her, and applied his force so well, that he forced her to strike; the Captain being so wounded, that he died the next day; the Delivrance taking advantage of this, presently got clear out of sight. The cargoes of

Digitized by Google

the Marquis D'Antin, and the Louis Erasme which were taken, were valued at three millions of dollars, two in gold, silver, and plate, and one in cocao and Vigonia wood.

The Captain of the Delivrance having thus escaped, consulted with his officers what course to steer. It was resolved to steer for Louisbourgh, where there was the greatest probability of meeting with a convoy. The 12th of August we saw the island of Escatari, which lies about five leagues north of Louisbourgh. The 13th we saw a brigantine plying along the coast for Louisbourgh: we hoisted a French ensign, which was answered by the other firing two or three guns. An hour afterwards, we saw two men of war coming out of Louisbourgh, which we took for two ships of the French squadron stationed there, being under French colours, and all the forts of the place, and ships in the harbour the same. Then it was, that we thought ourselves at the end of all our fatigues and sufferings, come to a place of safety. What therefore was our astonishment, when the two ships coming up alongside, one fired into us! To resist, would have been temerity: the Captain instantly struck; and we were carried into the harbour. I recommended the papers that related to the mensuration of the meridian to the Captains, explaining the business I had been employed on: they were sent to the commander of the squadron, with whom they remained, till, with myself, they were sent to England. Others of a different nature, not proper to fall into an enemy's hand, I threw into the sea, with some balls fixed to them.

Don George Juan's return to Madrid.

The ship La Lys parted company from the three others the 5th of February, making so much water in the hold, that she was obliged to steer for Valparaiso,

Digitized by Google

paraiſo, where ſhe careened and watered, and put to ſea again the 1ſt of March. It was the 27th of May, before they croſſed the line. The 1ſt of June, proviſions and water growing ſhort, the Captain ſteered for Martinico. The 29th of June, they made the iſland of Tobago; and July 9th, having been carried paſſed Martinico, &c. by currents, he made Cape François, in Saint Domingo; in which iſland, in the harbour of Leogan, were five French men of war expected to convoy a fleet of merchant-men to Europe.

The town of Cape François is about a mile long, and contains fourteen hundred inhabitants. The houſes are in general built of ſtone. The only fortification is a ſingle rampart, with two batteries to defend the harbour. But the garriſon is numerous, and the militia well diſciplined. No country in the world can be better cultivated than the neighbourhood; every inch of ground is applied to the very beſt uſe its nature will admit. The planters, ſcattered about the country upon their farms, live comfortably, and even in affluence. They cultivate ſugar, indigo, coffee, tobacco, &c. the joint produce of which is ſo large, that thirty thouſand are ſent every year to the mother-country from Cape François alone. What therefore will be the quantity when the whole ſhare poſſeſſed by France comes to be cultivated! It is a contraſt to the other part of the iſland, which though more fertile does not ſupport itſelf, Spain being obliged to ſend a ſupply to the garriſon and the eccleſiaſticks; ſuch is the effect of induſtry! The plenty of all ſorts of proviſions and neceſſaries here is ſo great, that ſhipping, eſpecially in time of peace, are quickly ſupplied with every thing they want. Meat they have from the Spaniards in exchange for manufactures.

The trade carried on by France here may be calculated from the ſhipping it employs. No leſs than one

Digitized by Google

one hundred and ſixty ſhips, from one hundred and fifty to four or five hundred tons each, come annully to this port only, beſides what goes to Leogane, Petit Guave, and other inferior ones; and theſe ſhipping in their return to France, beſides the products of the lands, carry every year two millions of dollars in ſpecie; the reſult of a very great clandeſtine commerce with the Spaniſh ſettlements.

The climate of Cape François is very hot, ſo that new-comers are obliged to be very circumſpect in their diet, or they are preſently carried off. Among the inhabitants are many people of very great wealth, all acquired from the improvement of the lands: moſt of the ranks live in great eaſe, happineſs, and even affluence, ariſing from that laborious frugal inventive ſpirit, which is always inſtigating them to work improvements.

At the end of Auguſt the French ſquadron of five men of war came into the harbour. Sept. 6th, they ſailed with fifty merchantmen under their convoy. Oct. 27th, we made Cape Prior on the coaſt of Gallicia. The 31ſt they ſaw Breſt Bay, and that afternoon the whole fleet came to an anchor. Don George being thus landed in France took the opportunity to pay his reſpects to that illuſtrious body the academy of ſciences, to whom he communicated ſeveral particulars concerning our operations in Peru. He was admitted a correſponding member, and having finiſhed his buſineſs at Paris, he ſet out for Madrid in order to lay before the King the ſucceſs of his commiſſion.

Louiſburg.

This place is in latitude forty-five degrees fifty minutes north. It is of a middling ſize: the houſes are of wood, but with ſtone foundations. It is walled, and extremely well fortified. The harbour

Digitized by Google

is large and safe, but the entrance very narrow. The fishery is prosecuted with such success from it, that there are single people who have forty or fifty barks which go daily to it, and carry three or four men each.

The whole island is covered with thick forests of pines of two kinds, one fit for boards and such like uses; the other, being short and knotty, is used for fuel.

I shall not dwell on the disagreeable circumstances of my captivity at Louisburg; but only observe, that justice and gratitude will not permit me to pass over the humanity of Commodore Warren, who, besides the honour of his table, which I several times enjoyed, recommended my papers to the care of, and myself to the good treatment of the Captain of the ship, who was to carry me to England. This was Captain John Bret of the Sunderland. The 4th of October we embarked, the 19th the squadron put to sea, steering for Newfoundland, and the 24th entered the bay of Ferriland in that island, where we waited for the merchant ships collecting, which we were to convoy to Europe. The face of the country here is very unequal, being covered with hills and mountains: they are every where over-grown with pines, which upon the hills are not above three or four toises high, but in the sheltered valleys are much higher. The cold in winter is exceedingly severe, the whole country being covered with ice and snow, and the bays and harbours entirely frozen. This severe weather sets in early. While we were here, on the 21st of November it froze so sharp, that we were obliged to wait till the sun had begun to break the ice in order to force our way out, which, had we neglected, we should have been locked up for the whole winter. This weather is not indicated by the latitude, that of Placentia being forty-seven degrees ten

Digitized by Google

ten minutes. The inhabitants who winter here ſhut themſelves up cloſe in their houſes, and go out only in ſun-ſhine, which they then enjoy greatly. The whole coaſt is a continued chain of excellent and ſecure harbours, into ſome of which run rivers and brooks ſo full of trout and other fiſh, that they ſeem to vie with the ſea in fecundity.

We ſet ſail, as was ſaid, the 21ſt of November, being in all above ſixty ſhips; and Dec. 22d we anchored in Plymouth Sound, after which we worked up the channel. Dartmouth harbour is a kind of open road, the country around it is extremely delightful, all interperſed with ſeats and farm-houſes, and all the hills and plains cultivated, which, with the verdure of the paſtures and the hedges ſeparating the fields, ſhews how well the goodneſs of the ſoil is ſeconded by the induſtry of the inhabitants. The 29th we anchored at Spithead. From the ſhip I was carried to Fareham, a pleaſant village at the upper end of Portſmouth harbour, the place appointed for our captivity. I muſt here do juſtice to the politeneſs of Captain Bret to all the priſoners of my rank, whom he not only admitted to his table during the voyage, but prevailed on all the other officers to do the ſame, who vied with each other in civility to us and humanity to the inferior ſort: and let this remain a monument of my gratitude to ſuch a generous ſet of gentlemen. Puſey Brooke, Eſq; was Commiſſary for the French priſoners, and Mr. Rickman for the Spaniſh, and from both theſe gentlemen I received ſuch reapeated inſtances of their probity, humanity, politeneſs, and generoſity, as I can never forget; indeed the conduct of the latter deſerved the univerſal acknowledgement of the whole Spaniſh nation.

Theſe gentlemen offered to ſolicit the Admiralty for my papers, which was what I had moſt at heart. Mr. Brooke incloſed my petition to them, that they

Digitized by Google

would be pleaſed to order my papers to be examined for their ſatisfaction, and then return them to me. The anſwer was entirely becoming the generoſity of the nation among which the chance of war had brought me; it was, that the Duke of Bedford, as Firſt Commiſſioner of the Admiralty, and the other Lords of the Board, with one voice and with pleaſure granted my requeſt: nobly adding, that they were not at war with the arts and ſciences, or their profeſſors; that the Engliſh nation cultivated them; and it was the glory of its miniſters and great men to protect and encourage them. In the ſame generous ſtrain arrived the anſwers with which the Admiralty were pleaſed to honour me by their Secretary, Mr. Corbet. But the troubles which agitated the kingdom, upon account of the invaſion of the Pretender, much delayed the good deſigns of the Admiralty towards me in relation to my papers. The miniſtry upon the ſuppreſſion of thoſe troubles were more at leiſure, and I obtained leave to go to London, which I did the 12th of April, in company with Mr. Brooks.

On my attending the office for priſoners of war, an order was ſhewn me from Lord Harrington, Secretary of State, for bringing me to his houſe. He had been Embaſſador in Spain ſome years, and, among other eminent qualities, had a great affection for Spaniards, which I experienced in the obliging reception he gave me.

Martin Folkes Eſquire, Preſident of the Royal Society, ſo diſtinguiſhed for his learning and politeneſs, having heard of my being a priſoner at Fareham, had applied for my papers being delivered to him, leſt they might fall into hands ignorant of their contents, and by that means be miſlaid or abuſed; but, being mingled with many others of a different kind, it was difficult to ſeparate them without the author.

It

Digitized by Google

It was through the indefatigable attention of Mr. Folkes, that I not only regained my papers, but was introduced to the Royal Society, and to the acquaintance of very many perſons of diſtinguiſhed rank and genius.

Actions like theſe convinced me of the ſincerity of the Engliſh, their candor, their benevolence, and diſintereſted politeneſs. I obſerved the tempers, inclinations, cuſtoms, government, and policy of this praiſe-worthy nation, which, in its œconomical conduct and ſocial virtues, may be a pattern to thoſe who boaſt of ſuperior talents to all the reſt of mankind. Mr. Folkes having at length gone through my papers, made a report to the Admiralty, and ſo much in my favour, that if I was to inſert it, it would be the moſt honourable teſtimonial of our work. They were delivered to me the 25th of May: and, as a more illuſtrious teſtimony of eſteem, I was elected a member of the Royal Society.

Having obtained my papers and my liberty at the firſt ſolicitation for it, I embarked at Falmouth in the Liſbon packet-boat, and arriving at Liſbon, I haſtened to Madrid, which I reached the 25th of July 1746, eleven years and two months after my embarkation at Cadiz on this commiſſion. I found Spain in mourning for the loſs of its late ſovereign, Philip V. My firſt care was to wait upon the Marquis de la Enſenada, Secretary of State, with my papers, that he might lay them before his preſent Majeſty, Ferdinand VI. This gracious Prince was pleaſed to order them to be publiſhed under his own patronage.

OBSERVATIONS.

The preceding journal of one of thoſe few expeditions ordered by the Great for the promotion of ſcience, has always been eſteemed a monument

Digitized by Google

worthy of its ingenious author, who continues to enjoy that great reputation he obtained from the publication of it. It is allowed to rank for truth and accuracy among the beſt books of travels in our language. Every part of the work ſhews the probity and honour of the author, ſo that one is perfectly ſatisfied, that he would in no caſe whatever knowingly deceive his readers; and when he deſcribes things which he did not ſee himſelf, he takes care to do it in ſuch a manner, that the reader cannot be deceived; and it is plain, that he was attentive to the authorities from which he drew his information.

Travels of this ſort rarely appear, and when they do, they ought to be the more eſteemed. It is ſeldom that Kings are ſo attentive to the advancement of knowledge, as to execute ſuch propoſals as this of the academy of ſciences at Paris. When voyages profeſſedly ſcientifical are made, the principal perſons concerned are neceſſarily men of ſcience: their regiſters and deſcriptions muſt of courſe be of a very different complexion from thoſe of merchants, or mere ſailors or ſoldiers. This is very much the caſe in the preceding journal.

The great ſcene of theſe operations, Peru, was a country, about which the world was as much in the dark, as any in all America. No travels had been made into it; and the voyages that had the ports of it for their object, were confined to the coaſts, ſo that thoſe which have been publiſhed, either deſcribe merely the coaſts, ports, and maritime commerce, or they deſcribe what their authors could not have ſeen. What the internal ſtate of that vaſt country was, the world knew very little, till the publication of theſe travels.

We now find that the old idea of countries, abounding with the precious metals, being therefore ſteril and deſert, was a mere vulgar error, ſince

Digitized by Google

ſince Chili every where abounds with gold, ſilver, and other mines, and is by much the fineſt, moſt fertile, and moſt agreeable country on the face of the globe. The particulars which our author gives of the climate, ſoil, and productions of that immenſe kingdom are exceedingly curious; it is eaſy to collect from them, that no other country in the world is ſo compleat: ſince, at the ſame time that the ſoil is ſo fertile, all its productions are in a degree of plenty of which we have no conception in Europe. The climate is as ſalubrious, as the ſoil is exuberant, which is contrary to what we uſually find; for where we ſee ſuch unuſual fertility, it is, generally ſpeaking, in climates too hot and moiſt to be wholeſome.

But though the precious metals are not *phyſically* prejudicial to the products of the earth's ſurface, *morally* they are ſtrongly ſo; for, by the attention of the people being too much called to mining, the better bleſſings of the country are neglected. Nineteen twentieths of a ſoil, which nature has formed for yielding the moſt abundant harveſts, lies waſte. Mining does not increaſe the people, that is the reſult of agriculture alone; and it is the increaſe of people that gives that value to the earth's products, without which they will never be produced: Beef and wheat are ſo plentiful in Chili, that the hide of the ox is the great object, and wheat not worth the ſowing. But what a ſcene of plenty, wealth, commerce, and power would this country exhibit, if Spaniards had increaſed in it as Engliſh have done in North America! and what an intereſting ſpectacle to the world, whether independant, or not on Spain!

Peru we find, in this work, is a moſt fertile country in all thoſe rich products, which make the wealth of the Weſt Indies. It is evident, from the account here given, that if Peru was in any other hands, it would totally put down all the French and Engliſh

Digitized by Google

ſugar-iſlands: the ſugar here, with ſcarce any cultivation, is much more productive than the moſt operoſe exertions can make it in the iſlands, and the general plenty of the country in proviſions and lumber, would enable plantations to be conducted in that reſpect without expence: all that is wanting is induſtry and navigation: with ſuch prodigious objects, an induſtrious nation would cut through the iſthmus of Panama, which is known to be practicable; then all that laviſh plenty of every thing in Peru and Chili, ſugar, cacao, tobacco, indigo, cochineal, wheat, proviſions, hides, timbers, &c. &c. would find a market, and Spain would make more ſolid and uſeful wealth from the fertility of the ſurface, than ſhe does at preſent from ranſacking the bowels of the earth.

TRAVELS

Digitized by Google

TRAVELS

THROUGH

SICILY,

And that Part of ITALY, formerly called

MAGNA GRÆCIA.

AND

A Tour through ÆGYPT, tranſlated from the German of Baron RIEDESEL.

MARCH 13th 1767, I went on board one of the King of Sicily's xebecs, commanded by a Knight of Malta, and the 18th came to anchor in the port of Palermo. The ſituation of this capital of Sicily diſappointed me. Its ſize is not large, but very populous, for it contains one hundred and twenty thouſand people. It is the only town in all Italy which has lamps at the public expence.

The art of painting is here ſo little ſtudied, that I could not find a ſingle perſon here, who was able to inform me of the beſt pictures. The Jeſuits collection of antiquities is a good one; but like the *Muſeum Kircherianum* at Rome, is mixed with trifles. In the cathedral at Moreale, a little town near Palermo, is a painting of the martyrdom of Saint

Digitized by Google

Placidus, the fineſt piece of Morealeſe, the Sicilian Raphael.

Palermo has an annual income of one million of crowns, each of twelve Neapolitan carlini. A part of it is employed in buying corn to ſell to the people in bread at a regular price, which is thirty-three ounces at four grani, or about two-pence ſterling. The whole Sicilian trade of corn is from hence; it all pays a duty to the king of ſix ſhillings and ſixpence ſterling per ſalma of eight buſhels, and this is the greateſt revenue the king has.

March 30th I left Palermo: as the roads in this iſland are impaſſible for carriages, the way to travel is on horſeback, or in litters. I preferred riding, and was obliged to take a ſoldier with me, who the King keeps as guards againſt banditti. Travelling thus is ſo common, that the owners of good eſtates, always keep armed horſemen as guards. There is this good in it, that the ſoldiers are very honeſt and faithful, and you are ſafe in their hands.

Leaving Palermo, I reached Alcamo, where I was received with the utmoſt hoſpitality, having a recommendation to a man of note, who entertained me in the politeſt manner. Around this place they have plenty of manna, which is the juice of a kind of white acacia, whoſe bark they wound in the months of July, Auguſt, and September; the ſap is dried by the ſun, and becomes manna.

Eight miles from hence, near Cattaafimi, there appears on a little hill, a very perfect temple of the moſt ancient doric order. It is a remnant of the ancient town of Segeſtus: it has thirty-ſix columns. The ſame day I went to Trapani, the ancient Drepanum, a well-built place, famous for its ſalt-works. The ſea-water is let into ſeveral reſervoirs, where the ſun evaporates the water, and leaves the ſalt; but for this mode of doing it, a very hot climate is neceſſary, and the ſoil muſt be rock, chalk, or clay.

Here

Digitized by Google

Here alſo is a great tunny-fiſhery, for which the Genoeſe family of Palavicini gave one hundred and twenty thouſand zechini, and clear by it twenty-thouſand Neapolitan ducats in a good year.

On the Monte di Trapano, there are but few remains of the ancient temple of Venus Erycina. Next to Etna, it is the higheſt in the whole iſland. The moſt beautiful women in Sicily live in this little town: their complexions are as fair as thoſe of an Engliſhwoman, with black eyes full of vivacity, and the moſt regular Grecian profiles. Probably the pure air is the reaſon of this.

From Trapani I went to Marſala, the ancient Lilybaum, round which they cultivate the greateſt quantity, and the beſt ſort, of the plant of which pot-aſhes are made, called *Soda*, or *Saponara*: they ſow it in March, and in September cut and burn it.

Mazzara is an inconſiderable place, though near the ſhore fiſh is very ſcarce, from the African pirates ſo often taking the fiſhermen, that they have hardly one that has not been once, ſome three or four times a ſlave at Tunis, which is but one hundred miles from hence. They here raiſe much cotton, which is ſown in the ſpring, and ripens in autumn. Twelve miles from Mazzara are the ruins of a gigantic temple; and at Campobello are ſome quarries, where the monſtrous maſſes of ſtone were cut with which it was built. Here I was convinced of the methods of the ancients in taking ſtone from their quarries; for here are ſtill ſome capitals and pieces of columns half wrought out of the rock, and half contained in it.

Caſtel Verano lies in a fine well-cultivated plain, yielding excellent wine and oil: the whole fertile tract belongs to the Duke di Monte Leone. Sciacca is a town moſt pleaſantly ſituated on a little hill, with a proſpect of the ſea, and of a moſt beautiful coun-

Digitized by Google

country, planted with fig, orange, and lemon-trees: piſtachio-trees are alſo in plenty.

Girgenti, the ancient Agrigentum, is forty miles diſtant from Sciacca. The modern town is four miles from the ſea, on a high mountain. Here is an eaſy declivity four miles long, bounded by the ſea, and extending ſix or ſeven miles on each ſide; the whole a ſheet of vines, olives, almond-trees, corn, and the fineſt fruits; the poſſeſſions of each perſon divided by hedges of aloe and Indian fig-wort, hundreds of nightingales filling the air with melody; and amidſt all this rural beauty, the well-preſerved temple of Juno Lacinia, the entire one of Concord, the remains of that ſacred to Hercules, and the ruins of the gigantic one of Jupiter.

The baptiſtry in the cathedral is made of one of the moſt excellent, and perhaps the moſt beautiful baſſo-relievos of antiquity which has been preſerved in marble to our times. Nothing can exceed the elegance, grace, and beauty of the figures. In the chapter, they have another beautiful antique; a vaſe in *terra cotta*. It is one of the largeſt and fineſt of antiquity, of the moſt elegant elliptic form, black, with yellow figures, which have beautiful profiles.

The ancient Agrigentum lies on the declivity of the ſame mountain at the ſummit of which the modern Girgenti ſtands: among the ruins, thoſe of the gigantic temple of Olympian Jupiter are the moſt ſtriking. The very exiſtence of this temple, as deſcribed by Diodorus Siculus, has been doubted. I meaſured columns, trygliphs, the cella, &c. and from them I am clear Diodorus is right. I wiſh I could compare the ſize of Saint Peter's at Rome with the above proportions. I make no doubt but the temple would appear by far the moſt magnificent and ſurprizing building, nor can any thing more ma-

Digitized by Google

majeſtic be imagined. About two hundred ſcudi would be ſufficient to get all the ruins of this temple cleared away, and then the ſpace it ſtood upon might be perfectly meaſured. The ſubterranean canals are very ſtriking: they are cut through the rock, and ſpread in innumerable branches through the whole town for cleanſing it. Half way, between the top and bottom of the mountain, the ancient road is ſtill to be ſeen: even the ruts are now viſible, and from thence the breadth of their carts may be inferred. I found them only three palms (twenty-five inches and a half) wide.

The fertility of this part of the country is amazing. In April the corn was ſo high as to hide us and our horſes, and I meaſured graſs that was ten palms high (eighty-five inches). They likewiſe breed the nobleſt horſes of all Sicily, ſo ſure-footed that we could ride down a declivity where the foot-paſſengers, who accompanied us, were obliged to ſlide down.

The country people are obliged to live poorly, for the lands are all in the hands of the rich. The monks, who have large poſſeſſions, leave the ſoil waſte rather than be at the expence of cultivating it. Labour is low: the daily pay is fifteen grani a day let him work ever ſo hard in the fields.

There are about twenty thouſand ſouls in the city. The King has made a new port, by which means it has a conſiderable corn-trade: of the ſeven towns allowed to export it, this has the largeſt ſhare. In the magazines are always eighteen thouſand ſalma (ſomething leſs than a quarter). The ſort of ſtone here, which is mixed with nitre, and the dryneſs of the climate preſerves the corn here. They dig pits in the rock, ram in the corn cloſe, and exclude the air in order to preſerve it.

Intending a voyage to Malta, I went by land to Alicata, which is twenty-four miles from Girgenti.

In

In this excurſion I ſaw one of the fineſt and beſt cultivated parts of Sicily. I dined at Palma, a populous place, pleaſantly ſituated in a fertile country, planted with all ſorts of fruit, eſpecially almonds which are in great demand here. At Alicata I hired one of the Malteſe barks called *Speranaras*, and the 13th of April ſailed from Sicily in it. We coaſted to Mazzarelli, where the ſailors wait for night in order to paſs to Malta, which is only ninety miles diſtance. At ten in the morning of the 14th we landed on Ghozzo, a moſt remarkable ſpot, for it appears quite uncultivated, yet is uncommonly well planted. The ſurface is a hard barren rock, but broken, pounded, and watered till converted to ſoil, which the indefatigable inhabitants cultivate. In this manner all the ſurface of Malta is managed; and cuſtom has made this ſo familiar, that the countryman envies not the fertility of Sicily: he is happy if he can marry an Arabian beauty, and eat his fill of white-onions and garlick: with theſe they are perfectly contented. They cultivate abundance of ſugar, and ſo much cotton that the export enriches them.

The ſame evening we arrived at Malta. No one can enter the harbour without aſtoniſhment: the extent, its ſafety, and diviſions, are the work of nature in forming the rock; nor are the exertions of art leſs admirable in the variety of fortifications.

The town of Valletta is well built, and conſiſts of twenty thouſand ſouls. In Malta and Ghozzo the whole number is one hundred thouſand. The fortifications are ſo extenſive, that they demand ſixty thouſand men to defend them. In the harbour I ſaw four gallies, two ſhips, and one frigate, which are ſo well manned that the Turks fear them more than all the reſt of Italy.

The revenues of the Grand Maſter are about eighteen thouſand *louis d'ors*: much of it ariſes from

Digitized by Google

the abſolute monopoly of corn, which he ſells at what price he pleaſes. The principal commodities of the iſland are cotton, which is better than the Levant; of this they export to the amount of four hundred thouſand dollars (at four ſhillings); and oranges remarkably fine. The Grand Maſter lets his garden of ſeven thouſand orange and ſeven thouſand lemon-trees at one thouſand Sicilian ſcudi a year. A terrace of ſtrawberries lets at one hundred and fifty ſcudi, becauſe they yield thrice a year. Cummin-ſeed is alſo exported in quantities.

The Malteſe carry on a conſiderable trade.

The African climate appears in the people, principally in the men, who have flat and broad noſes, thick chins and lips, and frizzled woolly hair.

April 23, I ſailed from the iſland, and landed at Cape Paſſaro in Sicily. I ſtopped at Marzamemi, and obſerved a quantity of barley and oats growing like wild plants on the heaths: a circumſtance denied by many naturaliſts *. From hence I went eight miles to Avola, a little town, where the ſugar-plantations and ſugar-houſes are worth ſeeing. It is ſituated on a pleaſant hill, and is as regularly built as Turin. Before the Dutch reduced the expence of labour by means of ſlaves, there was much more ſugar raiſed here than there is at preſent: and though there is a duty of four ſhillings and three-pence halfpenny upon the import of one hundred and ſeventy-five pounds of foreign ſugar, yet the Dutch can ſell their Weſt Indian ſugar cheaper than the inhabitants can theirs, becauſe labour is here ſo much dearer. The cane grows

* It is pity that the author was not naturaliſt enough to determine the ſpecies of oats and barley; for the ſorts of the latter commonly cultivated are not known to grow wild in any country; and the common oats we cultivate only grow wild in Juan Fernandes as Linneus obſerves, and which, no doubt, were firſt brought there by ſome European ſhip. Mr. FORSTER.

like

Digitized by Google

like the common reed, but not so large. They cut it in September, squeeze out the juice in a mill, and refine it in several boilers by different degrees of heat: the juice is then dried and put into the forms for sale. The Sicilian sugar is sweeter than all other sorts, but it can never be made so white. I doubt whether the ancients knew the use of sugar, for there is no account of it in any ancient author.

April 26th, I sailed into the vast port of the city of Syracuse, once so celebrated and powerful. Having a great idea of the magnificence of this place, whose walls extended one hundred and eighty stadia in circumference, and called Πενταπωλις, because consisting of five towns. I could not conceive from what I saw how it could ever have such a name. I sought for all the famous edifices, but I sought in vain. About a mile from Syracuse, in that part formely called Neapolis, which was the most beautiful part of the old town, is now planted with vines and olive-trees. I saw the celebrated Latomiæ, where the ear of Dionysius is cut in the rock. Its structure naturally causes so strong an echo, repeating even the softest-whispered sounds, that when a piece of paper is torn to pieces at one end of it, it may be plainly heard through the whole place.

Somewhat above the Latomiæ, is the great theatre of ancient Syracuse, cut in the mountain: though the *Scena* is now entirely destroyed, yet its extent, its noble appearance, being hewn in the live rock, and its most pleasing situation excite the highest surprize. I spent two days in viewing it: it affords one of the most picturesque views in all Sicily: it is the oldest theatre that has been preserved, being built in the first ages of Syracuse: An immense quantity of water must have been used in it, as appears from a considerable volume now led into it through an aqueduct, which turns two mills. Here and there in it are groups of different trees, filled

Digitized by Google

filled with nightingales: upon the whole, the view of this theatre is one of the moſt ſingular, and at the ſame time as beautiful as any in all Sicily.

As a proof of the fertility of the Syracuſan ſoil, I may mention the excellent Muſcatello wine, of which they cultivate above twelve ſorts. Here are olive-trees of an amazing height and bigneſs, which are above two hundred years old. They have alſo tobacco plantations, but not much corn.

Leaving Syracuſe, I paſſed by Merilli, where the ſugar plantations are as numerous as at Avola, and from thence reached the foot of Mount Etna, and the town of Catania, which is one of the fineſt in Sicily, and when quite rebuilt will ſurpaſs Meſſina and Palermo. Since the earthquake of 1693, which deſtroyed the whole, they have rebuilt it perfectly regular, with long and broad ſtreets: the houſes are all built of lava, and the ſtreets paved with it. Around this place the appearance of the eruptions is very dreadful. Veſuvius, with its eruptions, appears like a mere puppet-ſhew in compariſon with Etna, or like a petty lake to the raging ocean.

Amid the ſtreams of ſolid lava, higher than the greateſt houſes, there are cultivated ſpots truly charming. The corn of Catania, its wine, fruit, and garden-plants are famous for quantity, flavour, or ſize: none have the ſulphureous taſte of thoſe of Veſuvius. The cathedral at Catania is the largeſt and moſt beautiful church in the whole iſland. The Prince Biſcari, who is the principal and richeſt citizen in Catania, takes particular care to re-eſtabliſh the ancient architecture. He has brought it ſo far, that in thoſe ſtreets, which are ſtill unfiniſhed, all the houſes are to be built alike.

The ancient town, which is many feet under ground, through the care of that amiable Prince, is again brought to light. It is no wonder that no part of old Catania remains above ground, becauſe

Digitized by Google

it has repeatedly undergone the fate of Herculaneum Pompeii. In front of the cathedral he had dug to and cleared an ancient building of great extent and good architecture: it was built of lava. The theatre was of vaſt extent, even greater than that of Marcellus at Rome.

There are two beautiful and rich collections at Catania, one of them belonging to the Benedictines, and the other to the Prince of Biſcari. In the former are three hundred of the fineſt earthen vaſes to be found in Sicily, beautiful both in regard to the form and deſign of the figures. The muſeum of Prince Biſcari is one of the moſt complete in Italy. Among the ſtatues is a Tronco of Bacchus, as beautiful as ever I ſaw, and executed in the higheſt ſtile of Greek purity. There are alſo two beautiful ſtatues of Venus, and one of a Muſe, all in the Greek manner.

On the 1ſt of May I began my journey up Mount Etna, with my ſervant and a guide, mounted on mules, with a pack-horſe, which carried the neceſſary proviſions for two days. Towards noon I arrived at Saint Nicolo, twelve miles from Catania, where is the original convent of the Benedictines, who have erected ſuch expenſive buildings in Catania: here they ought to live in duſt and aſhes, whereas they ſquander away their revenues with great pomp and vanity. As ſoon as you leave Catania you begin to go upwards very gently. You paſs through the moſt beautiful and cultivated fields of vines, fruit-trees, and corn, till Nicoloſi, ten miles from Catania. Oranges and lemon-trees are abundant, and alſo thoſe fruits which are ſcarce in hot climates, as cherries, apples, pears, &c.

Having refreſhed myſelf in the convent we proceeded: the road is here very diſagreeable, being on congealed lava, which they call *Sciarra*. It came from the eruption of 1669, which flowed into the ſea,

Digitized by Google

ſea, and wholly ſurrounded the caſtle of Catania. The road paſſes cloſe to the mount from which that eruption iſſued: there are an hundred ſuch on Etna, and this is as big as Veſuvius, from which the magnitude of Etna may be conceived. Here begins the foreſt-part which I had been told was full of the fineſt timber; but I ſaw only horn-beams, crooked and bent to the ground. Higher up I met with ſome oaks, but not fine *. Having paſſed through the woody part, I got to the eruption of laſt year 1766, of which the lava was yet ſmoking. Night being at hand, and having ten miles yet to aſcend, we found a grotto which had been formed by the lava, in which we made a fire and reſted. At midnight we went forward, and having aſcended ſix miles, I arrived at a plain called *Piano di Formenta*. From hence it is two miles to Empedocles' tower, which probably was built by the Normans as a place from whence they might keep a good look-out. This is the top of the mountain, being about ſix miles in circumference, and having the crater in the center, from whence a conſtant black ſmoke ariſes: this crater is two miles high, and theſe two miles were the moſt diſagreeable part of the whole journey, as I ſunk continually to the knees in ſand, aſhes, and pummice ſtones.

At laſt we reached the ſummit: the abyſs, from whence the ſmoke iſſues, is abſolutely unfathomable. I threw ſtones down, but never heard them fall. The ſmoke is perpetual, and we heard a rumbling noiſe like the daſhing of billows in a tempeſtuous ſea.

Here I enjoyed the fineſt proſpect in the world. I ſaw the ſun riſe behind the Appenine hills in Calabria, and ſhine upon all the eaſtern coaſt of Sicily and the ſea, which parts it from Calabria. The

* This is a very different account from that of Sir William Hamilton, who it is to be ſuppoſed took a different route.

coaſt

coaſt of that province I ſaw diſtinctly as far as the gulph of Taranto. Catania, Auguſta, and Syracuſe, on my right; Tavormina and the environs of Meſſina on my left, ſeemed to lie at my feet. The different eruptions of the mountains, the wood, the fields of fertile Sicily, the innumerable towns and villages, the lake of Leontium, afford, all together, an enchanting view.

I. ſaw the ſhores of the whole iſland. I looked down upon all the hills of Sicily, which are partly cultivated, partly covered with wood, and part naked rocks. The cold here, on the 2d of May, was as violent as in Germany on the higheſt mountains in January; and about ſeven in the morning, when I began to deſcend the mountain, I was quite ſtiff with cold, and could hardly ſtir though I had not ſtaid at the top of it above three quarters of an hour. Breathing, however, is not at all difficult. As I went down I ſaw the eruption of 1763, which was the moſt dreadful, for the height of the lava is as high as the greateſt palaces at Rome. Where this ceaſed that of 1766 began, and flowed on in the ſame direction. The lava of this ſtupendous mountain is not ſo various or ſo beautiful as that of Veſuvius, of which there are above forty ſorts in Sir William Hamilton's poſſeſſion. Prince Biſcari, after much aſſiduity, has got only twelve from Etna. The cultivated fields at the foot of Etna are not ſo enchanting and delightful as thoſe near Veſuvius. The beautiful green of the vine, which the countryman in the laſt-mentioned neighbourhood combines with the lofty poplar, here keeps low on the ground; but theſe fields produce a greater variety of fruits than Portici and its environs. Here all kinds, even dates on the palm-trees, ſucceed and ripen. All kinds would ſucceed at different heights of the mountain if managed with ſkill. Botaniſts inform us,

Digitized by Google

us, that the cinnamon and coffee-tree grow wild near Mount Etna.

The inhabitants around the mountain are a good-natured, civil, and honeſt people, ſuch as are to be met with in all places where few ſtrangers reſort: they are well-ſhaped, and the pure and ſerene air of the mountain gives them livelineſs, joy, and contentment. The women are handſome.

Catania is the only place in Sicily where they practice innoculation of the ſmall-pox; and I was aſſured that they had not taken it from books, but from ſome Greeks who paſſed through the town five and twenty years ago.

Between Catania and Taurominium I went on ſhore at Maſcoli to viſit a prodigious cheſnut-tree, which ſeveral travellers have ſpoken of. Its thickneſs is two hundred and four Neapolitan palmi (eight inches and a half). It is hollow from age, and in it is a houſe in which thoſe who gather the cheſnuts paſs the night.

From hence I went to Taurominium, now Tavormina, where there is a remain of antiquity, the moſt remarkable in the world, the theatre: the whole *Scena* is preſerved entire. This town is on a hill and pleaſant, the fields around are well cultivated; they produce, beſides wines and oil, a great quantity of ſilk, which is reared in all that tract of country as far as Meſſina.

I reached Meſſina in the morning, and there, for the firſt time after I had left Palermo, took up my lodgings in an inn. The excellent ſituation of Meſſina and its celebrated harbour, are known to have had no equal in the world.

The oppreſſions of government ſince the laſt rebellion, and the plague in 1743, have depopulated Meſſina ſo that there are only twenty-five thouſand ſouls in it, though it might be more populous than Palermo.

The

Digitized by Google

The citadel is ſituated on the neck of land which forms the harbour: it is very ſtrong, and well contrived, requiring only four thouſand men to defend it; it is ſtronger towards the town than towards the ſea, becauſe Charles the IId of Spain built it after the laſt rebellion to awe the town.

Meſſina might enjoy an extenſive commerce, but it has neither ſhips nor trade, and though numerous manufactures might flouriſh here, they make only a few ſilk handkerchiefs, knit ſtockings, and light ſilks of one colour. Silk is plentiful here, and of the beſt kind; but the King prepoſterouſly prevents the exportation of it, by laying a duty of ſixteen per cent on it. They alſo make ſome carpets, which look like Turkey ones.

As the government determined after the laſt rebellion to oppreſs the city effectually, they loaded it with impoſts. All the bread conſumed pays fifty-eight per cent. notwithſtanding which, bread is not dearer here than at Palermo; ſixteen ounces ſell for four *grani* in both places, from whence the prodigious profit of the *Colonna Frumentaria*, which is managed by the Senate at Palermo, may be calculated.

Here I concluded my tour round Sicily; but before I quit the iſland, I muſt obſerve upon the inhabitants, that like all the people of warm climates, they have quick parts and genius, but with it they are effeminate, voluptuous, and cunning. They have uncommon vivacity, but no phlegm; and to the climate is owing many inſtances of heroiſm. The following may ſerve as an example of real love put to the teſt. A Prince of one of the firſt families in Palermo had a ſecret connection with a young lady, who was his equal in rank: he married her afterwards, and in two months ſhe was delivered of a ſon. To avoid ſhame the child was ſecreted, and its education truſted to a peaſant. This went on till the

Digitized by Google

the mother on her death-bed discovered it. The youth was immediately sent for, and shewed more surprize than joy on being informed of his rank, and immediately declared, that unless he could marry a handsome young country girl he was in love with, he would not accept of it; but this being denied, he readily resigned his claims in favour of his brother, and lived moderately, but happily, with his country girl.

The former voluptuousness and intemperance in eating and drinking is quite vanished: no people live more moderately, and drunkenness they detest. They are so fond of sugar, that they eat no dishes without being sweetened with it. Theocritus's description of the cattle of Sicily, answers exactly now; you see the numerous herds of goats feeding on the hills, also the vast sheep and wethers; the many flocks of dwarfish red cattle, &c. The temperature and happiness of the climate allows the shepherds to pass the whole year in the fields; they live in huts of straw of their own raising, and their flocks are left day and night in the open air.

I continued my voyage from Messina to Reggio in Calabria the 11th of May, in the speronara I had hitherto used. The channel is twelve miles broad. The environs of Reggio are extremely pleasant, and the fields finely cultivated under mulberry-trees, oranges, lemons, and vines. Most of the silk of Calabria is raised hereabouts; eighty thousand pounds are sold annually from hence, and the quantity would be double, were it not so loaded with duties, laid on by the former Neapolitan and afterwards Spanish Prime Minister, the Marquis Gregori Squillace. The owner of the trees pays a tax for the soil, and for the trees; and when the silk is made, five carlini is paid for every pound, nor must it be sold to any other place than Naples: there it is purchased for twenty-five carlini, as the merchants have the

Digitized by Google

the monopoly of it: thus that ſingle impoſt amounts to twenty per cent. and if the taxes on the ſoil and trees are added, ſilk, which is the chief product of the kingdom, and which alone keeps down the balance of its paſſive trade, pays fifty per cent. to the King.

Wine ſucceeds very well about Reggio. From thence I continued my voyage to Gieraci, and from thence to Capo di Stilo, then to Melitimo, the ſhore being all well planted with olives, which form the greateſt part of the revenues of Calabria, though it abounds beſides with corn and wine.

Squillace ſtands on two hills. The rich hand of the preſent poſſeſſor appears in the fields, which are all richly planted.

All the towns of Calabria, on account of the badneſs of the air in the ſummer, are built on hills and mountains, upon which the air is purer; but this was not the caſe with the ancients, becauſe the country being ſo much more populous, the greater cultivation made the air more wholeſome.

Capo Colonne is the Promontorium Lacinium near Croton, on which the famous temple of Juno Lacinia ſtood. The modern town of Cotrone, is the ugliеſt in Italy. The badneſs of the air depopulates it, ſo that it contains not more than five thouſand ſouls. The Capo Colonne is quite unknown for the ſame reaſon, and reſembles the Campagna di Roma.

The 15th I went from Cotrone to Cape Aliæ, where the beſt anchovies are found in great abundance. From hence it is no great diſtance to Cariati, round which they collect the beſt manna, and in great quantities: but the owners of the manna-trees, are obliged to ſell their manna to the King at a fixed price, and the revenue is farmed at thirty-two thouſand ducats per annum.

Here

Digitized by Google

Here begins the gulph of Tarento. I ſailed along the ſhore to Corigliano, ſituated on a hill four miles from the ſea: here I landed to viſit the Duke of Corigliano, who is a great grazier, and breeds yearly about three hundred horſes. The inhabitants collect here a great deal of manna, pitch, and tar, and raiſe ſome ſilk. Liquorice-root is dug up in great quantities, of the juice of which the Duke has an annual clear income of four thouſand ducats, after deducting as much for the expences. The very tops of the hills yield wood, which is ſold; and their flax and hemp are exported. All ſorts of apples and pears, ſo ſeldom found good in Italy, are plentiful and excellent; and that nothing may be wanting, the ſea in this neighbourhood is richer in fiſh than any other part of the gulph of Tarento.

The management of liquorice is this. They dig the roots up between the months of November and June, and in five years time it grows again on the ſame ſpot. It is cruſhed in a mill, being formed into a maſs like dough; it is then boiled in a great boiler eight hours, during which time they pour water on it: it is then twice preſſed, and the reſinous juice ſqueezed out, which muſt then be boiled in another cauldron for twenty-four hours, after which it is cut into cakes, and packed into cheſts with bay-leaves for ſale in England and Holland.

Corigliano is a great place: the Duke reſides at it, when in the country. Its ſituation and proſpects are very pleaſing. Having been ſhewn every thing, and received with the utmoſt civility by the Duke, I continued my voyage to Tarento, where I arrived May 20. This place, formerly ſo famous and powerful a city, which oppoſed the forces of the Romans, and ſupported Hannibal in Italy; which ſet on foot armies, and equipped fleets; which carried arts, ſciences, luxury, and ſenſual pleaſures to ſuch a pitch, now conſiſts of only ſixteen thouſand peo-

Digitized by Google

ple, part of whom are a petty nobility too poor to go to Naples, and the reſt ſome poor fiſhermen, who live by fiſhing in the great harbour. All other arts are practiſed by ſtrange Neapolitans, and others, and the huſbandry is performed by Calabreſe. The people are addicted to indolence and pleaſure. They are well-ſhaped, and the women very handſome, with Greek features. The peaſants are very hoſpitable to ſtrangers, and ſhare with them all they have in the houſe without requiring any conſideration. But the men are very jealous, and immediately hide their women.

The monuments of the ancient Tarentum, conſiſt in very few remains. The country about Tarento is well cultivated, and in the gardens are the fineſt fruits and herbs; an excellent muſcadine is made here: the productions in general are excellent. In the harbour, a ſhell is taken in great abundance, called *Lana Penna*, which yields the ſilk of which they knit ſtockings, gloves, and other things. The fiſhermen ſell a pound of the raw wool for twelve or ſixteen carlini, a pair of gloves for thirty *(a carlini is four-pence)* and a pair of ſtockings one hundred, or one hundred and twenty. It is dearer than ſilk from the laborious preparation, but it is ſofter and warmer.

The country produces a great quantity of cotton, which is exported, much of it raw, yet they prepare it exceedingly well at Tarento. Happily they have no tax in this province on the cultivation of cotton, as there is on that of ſilk; and for this reaſon the province of Otranto, is one of the richeſt in the kingdom of Naples.

As I ſailed round the harbour, I found near the mouth of the river Galeſus, in the midſt of the ſalt-water, the famous ſpring which is very ſtrong, and from which you can take the freſh water unmixed

Digitized by Google

mixed even in the middle of the ſea. They call it *Il Citrello.*

May 23d I continued my voyage to Gallipoli, ſixty miles diſtant from Tarento, containing eight thouſand inhabitants, who are in affluent circumſtances, and their town well built. This place carries on the greateſt trade for oil in all Italy, as it ſucceeds perfectly well in Otranto, and is very plentiful: there is enough of corn, wine, and fruits in the neighbourhood for their own ſupply, and cotton is produced in large quantities, and made into muſlins. The oil at the preſent price pays a duty of ten per cent. on exportation; for the quantity which is ſold for twelve or thirteen carlini, pays five to the King. The whole town, which ſtands on a rock, is undermined, and the vaults filled with oil: the rock is of ſuch a quality, as to ferment, clear, and improve the oil. In 1766, they exported one thouſand three hundred and ninety-five laſt, or ſix hundred and thirteen thouſand eight hundred gallons, to other towns of the kingdom of Naples; and from the whole kingdom, ſeventeen thouſand three hundred and twenty-three laſts, or ſeven million ſix hundred and twenty-two thouſand one hundred and twenty gallons. This town alſo exports two hundred and forty-three *cantari* (at one pound three quarters) of ſpun cotton, and two hundred and forty-ſeven ditto manufactured. They have therefore a conſiderable trade here.

In the cathedral they ſhewed me ſeveral good paintings done by a nobleman of Gallipoli, named *Coppola*, whoſe family ſtill exiſts. I thought I diſcovered the whole manner of the French Coypel in them, and found the pieces very good. Upon making farther enquiries, the now living Count Coppola, told me, that his anceſtor when a youth travelled to France, and ſtaid there twenty years, leav-

Digitized by Google

ing many of his works with his name to them, but altered from Coppola into Coypel, to make it more French; that on his return from thence, he ſtudied and imitated the Italian maſters, for which reaſon his works at Gallipoli by much ſurpaſs thoſe he has left in France.

Here I determined to continue my journey to Naples by land, having ſailed a month, and ſix hundred miles in the ſame ſperonara. I therefore ſatisfied my ſeven ſailors, ſending them home completely happy with twenty guineas. They were moſt civil and obliging fellows; on the whole voyage not the leaſt diſpute happened between us. Their attention to travellers is beyond deſcription. In the mildneſs of their manners, and in their features, the flat noſe, thick eyebrows and lips, ſhort ſtature, and their beards, I obſerved the Arabian nature, and the boaſted fidelity of that nation.

I now continued my journey on horſeback towards Otranto, which is thirty-ſix miles from Gallipoli on the Adriatic. The country is richly planted with olives: the fine paſtures and the ſheep, and wool of this tract are famous. Otranto contains about three thouſand inhabitants.

From Otranto, I travelled thirty miles to Lecce. The continuation of the Via Appia from Brindiſi to Otranto, plainly appears in the ruins along the road, and in deſtroyed tombs on both ſides. Half way is Martanna, a pretty village of Greeks, who partly have kept their dreſs, and all preſerve their language. The villages between Otranto and Lecce are the fineſt in Italy, and the churches and houſes are built of a white ſtone, like that of Malta; the whole country is ſo beautifully cultivated, that it has the reſemblance of a continued garden.

Next to Naples, Lecce is the largeſt and fineſt city in the kingdom; the inhabitants are however only

Digitized by Google

only fifteen thousand, but it is big enough for eighty thousand.

The whole province abounds with such valuable products, and is blessed with so rich a soil, that, combined with the industry and ingenuity of the inhabitants, it might be the richest in the kingdom, if it were not the business of the finances to ruin and oppress its prosperity. From the flax which is raised in the neighbourhood, they make a great quantity of common lace. From the tobacco raised on the sands of Capo di Saint Maria, they make a sort of snuff, not inferior to that of Seville. So heavy is the tax on this article, that each owner can have only a certain number of plants, for every one of which he pays a tax to the King; all beyond that number are contraband. Tobacco, hemp, flax, cotton and oil might be exported in great abundance, were it not for the numerous imposts.

From Lecce to Brindisi are twenty-four miles, and all the way through olive plantations: that place, so famous in the time of the Romans, is now an inconsiderable unhealthy town of nine thousand souls, with a harbour fit only for fishing-barks. The soil round the place is very good, and produces excellent wine and oil in great abundance.

From hence I took the road to Ostuni, a little town with four thousand inhabitants; and from thence to Monopoli, through woods of olive-trees, which town has ten thousand souls; but is the ugliest of the many which lie along the Adriatic, yet are the environs very beautifully planted with orange and lemon-trees. They make cotton and linen stuffs here.

From hence I went to Bari the capital of the province of the same name. Nothing can be more beautiful than the site and environs, fertile in corn, wine, and oil. The nobility have great privileges:

Digitized by Google

they have the monopoly of those three rich commodities; a great thing, as there are only ten noble families. The number of inhabitants are thirty thousand; they are very industrious; they grind good glasses, and manufacture cottons and linens. They also make much soap from the ashes of the caput mortuum of wine. A very good muscadine grows near Bari.

From hence to Barletta the country is exceedingly pleasant and well cultivated, resembling that from Geneva to Lausanne. Passing Giovanezzo, Molfetta, and Bisceglie, I came to Trani; a sweet little town, regularly built with fine houses. Eight miles from Barletta you come to Cannæ, beyond Ofanto (*Ausidus*) is the famous field of battle, where Hannibal defeated Terentius Varro: it is to this day called *Campo di Sangue, the bloody field.* The field is a great plain, which is at present sown with barley; they to this day find old arms, rings, and other antiquities hereabouts.

I here observed a particular method of threshing pease and beans: twenty or thirty people danced on them with their wooden shoes in the field to the tune of a bag-pipe.

The Tarantula spider is found in the provinces of Lecce, Bari, and Apulia. It is a fact that the persons supposed to be bitten by it are cured by dancing to a particular tune. But the opinion of the physicians is, that the bite is not near so dangerous as imagined, and that there is more of custom and imagination in the cure than reality. There are, however, experiments both for and against this received opinion.

From Canosa I travelled to Cerignola, which, with its estates, belongs to the French Count d'Egmont. Ardona is a farm that makes part of the noble estates which the Jesuit convent dell' Orto in Apulia

Digitized by Google

Apulia poſſeſſes. This farm is of vaſt extent, and employs two hundred oxen only to plow the fields. In this part of Apulia the corn grows to a vaſt height. I ſaw ripe oats the 5th of June, the ſtraw above eight feet high, and barley and wheat began to ripen. Theſe three ſorts are the only kinds known here originally. The Emperor Charles V. firſt commanded rye to be ſown, for which reaſon it is called Grano Germano; they uſe it only in the mountains, and more ſterile parts of the country.

From hence I came to Ponte di Bovino, and here ends Apulia, ſo famous for its fertility and abundance: it is true there are vaſt fields of corn in it; but great tracts of land are uncultivated, which for want of inhabitants ſerve as paſtures for buffaloes and oxen.

Bovino lies in the Appenine mountains, and is quite ſurrounded by woods. The weather here was ſo cold, owing to the height of the country, that on the 6th of June I thought myſelf tranſplanted into Siberia. The country lies deſolate, covered with ſhrubs and buſhes. Towards Ariano, as you begin to deſcend, there is ſome cultivation: that is a conſiderable town containing fourteen thouſand people, but it is an ugly ill-built place, and its inhabitants have the reputation of being robbers.

To Avellino, part of the country is very pleaſant and fertile. The whole is full of populous villages. The women are handſome, and have a fine complexion; the natural effects of the pure air of the hills they inhabit. The town of Avellino is well ſituated, and contains ſeven thouſand ſouls.

From hence it is thirty miles to Naples. It was with pleaſure I approached the happy Campania, where nature ſhowers down her choiceſt bleſſings.

Digitized by Google

The populouſneſs, the cultivation, the abundance of proviſions, the ſight of contented people, all are proofs of the happineſs of this country.

The 8th of June I returned to Naples, having ſpent three months in paſſing countries where few accommodations are to be met with, on account of the few travellers who paſs through them; but thoſe difficulties made little impreſſion in compariſon with the uncommon beauties of nature, and the noble remains of Greek architecture.

OBSERVATIONS.

Baron Riedeſel, in theſe travels, has proved himſelf to be a man every way well qualified for making uſeful obſervations on the countries through which he paſſed. He is a man of learning, intimately acquainted with the claſſics. The face of the country, its agriculture, manufactures, commerce, productions, government, and ſtate of the people, with their manners, and good or bad qualities, are all objects of importance, and which he has no where omitted. By taking a route quite unuſual with travellers, we become acquainted with thoſe provinces of Naples, which no modern traveller but himſelf has given any account of; and we find in every page of his work ample proofs, that thoſe provinces are among the moſt fertile and the richeſt in the world, and every way deſerving the attention of men who travel for ſomething elſe than pictures and ſtatues. The kingdom of Naples appears in this account to be of more importance than any other, ſince the reſources of ſo many and ſuch plentiful articles of commerce, as the Baron almoſt every where deſcribes, want nothing but the errors of a bad government to be done away in order to poſſeſs far greater revenues than at preſent, more people,

Digitized by Google

ple, and greater power. The inſtances the Baron gives of the ill effects of many of the Neapolitan and Sicilian impoſts, are curious evidences of this fact. Sicily appears in his account to be what its character was formerly, the paradiſe of the creation in its ſoil, climate, productions, ports, &c. to have every bleſſing which nature can give, but to want very many which art ought to add.

Digitized by Google

TRAVELS

THROUGH

AFRICA,

THE

EAST INDIES,

AND

CHINA,

By M. LE POIVRE,

Late Envoy to the King of Cochin China.

The Western Coasts of Africa.

THE iſlands and weſtern diſtricts of this part of the world, which I have ſeen, are, for the greater part, uncultivated lands, inhabited by unhappy negroes. Theſe wretched men, who have ſo poor an eſtimation of themſelves as to ſell one another, never employ a thought on the cultivation of their lands.

From the river Angola to Cape Negroe, and from thence till you approach the Cape of Good Hope, nothing is to be ſeen but ſterile uncultivated lands. The coaſts are naked and covered with barren ſands; and you are under the neceſſity of travelling many leagues before you can diſcover a palm-tree, or the ſlighteſt verdure. The country and its few inhabitants ſeem to be ſtruck with one common curſe. From

the

Digitized by Google

the informations I have received touching these countries from the Italian Missionaries, who, with an admirable zeal, have penetrated into the heart of these accursed regions, I learn likewise that agriculture is just as languid in the interior parts as upon the coasts, although in many places the soil appeared much more fruitful from its natural productions.

THE CAPE OF GOOD HOPE.] Since the establishment of the Dutch, the lands (before as sterile as the rest) produce in abundance wheat and grain of every kind, wines of different qualities, and a considerable quantity of excellent fruits collected from every quarter of the world. There you see extensive pastures covered with horses, black cattle, and sheep.

The colony of Little Rochelle surpasses all the rest by the industry of the colonists, and the fertility of the lands which belong to it. The pastures are there composed of a variety of grasses, natives of the country, together with several different species of herbage which compose our artificial meadows in Europe, such as trefoile, lucerne, and sainfoin.

The arable land is here laboured as in Europe sometimes by horses, but oftener by oxen. The Dutch have by their industry corrected the natural sluggishness of these latter animals, by exercising them while young in a brisk pace. In consequence of which, I have seen at the Cape carriages, drawn by teams of ten or a dozen yoke of oxen, go as expeditiously as if drawn by horses.

The Cape is exposed, the greatest part of the year, to violent hurricanes, which blow generally from the north-east. These winds are so impetuous, that they would beat down the fruits from the trees, and sweep to destruction the labour of the farmer, had they not provided a barrier for the security of the harvest. The Dutch colonists have divided

Digitized by Google

divided their lands into ſmall fields, which they have ſurrounded with high paliſades of oaks, and other trees, planted very cloſe to one another, ſomewhat reſembling a charnielle, deſigned for the ornament of a garden. Theſe paliſades they cut every year as they grow, their height being commonly twenty-five or thirty feet: every ſeparate field in conſequence is incloſed like a chamber.

It is by this induſtry alone that the Dutch have rendered the colony not only the granery of all their ſettlements in the Eaſt Indies, but the moſt commodious place for veſſels to touch at for refreſhments and proviſions of all kinds.

The ſame attention at the Cape is paid to gardening as to the other branches of agriculture. You there find all the variety of European pulſe, greens, herbs and roots, with the beſt of thoſe peculiar to the other parts of the world. Independent of the gardens of the coloniſts, which are kept in as fine order as any in Europe, the India Company have laid out two or three gardens, extenſive and magnificent, which they ſupport with an expence worthy of a ſovereign company.

European gardeners are employed in the cultivation of each of thoſe vaſt gardens. In theſe gardens all the experiments are made in every new ſpecies of culture; and it is there that every private individual is provided gratis with ſuch plants and ſeeds as he may have occaſion for, together with the neceſſary inſtructions for their cultivation.

MADAGASCAR.] After doubling the Cape of Good Hope, you enter the Indian ſea, where you find the great iſland of Madagaſcar. We are ſtill unacquainted with many places in this iſland, though the Portugueſe, Dutch, French, and other Europeans have had ſettlements, and frequented it above two centuries. Thoſe parts which we know are very fertile, and the inhabitants would in all probability

Digitized by Google

probability cultivate them extremely well were there a vent for their productions. They rear numerous herds of cattle and ſheep; their paſturages, ſuch as nature has formed them, are rich. In many cantons are large tracts of tilled ground, covered with graſs of an extraordinary ſize, which grows to the height of five or ſix feet: it is excellent for nouriſhing and fattening their horned cattle which are of the largeſt ſpecies, and differ in ſhape from ours particularly by a large fleſhy protuberance on their neck.

In no country in the world that I have ſeen, are rice and other eſſential proviſions cheaper than in this iſland. For a remnant of coarſe blue cloth, which may be worth perhaps twenty-pence, the Madecaſſé gives two or three meaſures of rice, each holding about one hundred and ſixty pounds of pure rice.

Wheat would grow in Madagaſcar in the ſame abundance as rice: it was formerly cultivated ſucceſsfully in the ſettlement which we poſſeſſed at the ſouthern point of the iſland, called Port Dauphin. The lands there are of inconceivable fertility: the iſlanders intelligent and ingenious. In thoſe diſtricts where the Arabs have not penetrated, the ſimple laws of nature are their guides.

ISLE OF BOURBON.] About two hundred leagues eaſt of Madagaſcar lie the two iſlands of Bourbon and France, the ſoil of which is naturally as fertile as that of Madagaſcar, whilſt they enjoy a happier climate. Bourbon has no port; it is of conſequence little frequented by the ſhipping.

The lands of this iſland are principally employed in the culture of the coffee-tree. The firſt plants of this ſhrubby tree were brought from Mocha. It multiplies by its grains ſowing ſpontaneouſly: little attention, except weeding, is required. It demands a light ſoil, and thrives better in almoſt pure ſand than in rich ground.

Digitized by Google

ISLE OF FRANCE.] This island has two harbours, where the French shipping, going for China and the Indies, touch for refreshments.

THE COAST OF COROMANDEL.] Agriculture has degenerated since the conquest of this country by the Moguls, who, like all barbarous nations, have despised that industry which nourishes mankind, and attach themselves to that destructive art which desolates the earth.

The soil on the Coromandel coast is light, dry, and sandy, but will produce two crops every year without the necessity of one fallow season. After the rice-harvest is over, there is always a crop of some smaller grains, such as millet or French-beans.

The Malabars employ oxen, but more commonly buffaloes; these last being stronger and more capable of enduring the heat than the oxen. Their flocks of sheep are generally fed with the straw of rice, some herbs, and boiled beans. Here and there in the fields you see some small flocks of goats, and others of sheep, which differ from ours by being covered with hair instead of wool.

The wine, which they draw from cocoa-trees, when distilled, is the well-known liquor called *arrack*. A cocoa-tree yields about eight shillings-worth per annum. These trees are planted about twenty-five or thirty feet distant from each other. They produce nothing for ten or twelve years, but then annually bear fruit for above fifty years. They flourish best in a mixed sandy soil, and succeed extremely well even in pure sand.

The Coromandel coast has suffered most from the devastations of the Moguls. The coasts of Orixa, Malabar, the territory of Surat, the banks of the Ganges, and the interior parts of Indostan, are much more fertile, and in many of these countries agriculture flourishes.

THE

Digitized by Google

THE KINGDOM OF SIAM.] The kingdom of Siam, situated on the peninsula of the Indies beyond the Ganges, is in general extremely fertile. The fields, besides rice, produce in profusion an infinite variety of most delicate fruits, with little cultivation, such as the pine-apple, the Mangonstas, (the most delicate fruit perhaps in the world) mangoes of different kinds, and all excellent. Several species of oranges, the banana, the ducion, the gacca, with other fruits of an inferior quality.

The government of Siam is despotic: the Sovereign alone enjoys that liberty which is natural to all mankind. His subjects are all his slaves: every one of them is annually taxed with six months personal service without wages, and even without food. He allows them the other six months to procure themselves wherewithal to exist the year. Under such a government there is no law that can afford protection to individuals against violence, or in the smallest degree secure them in their property. Every thing is subject to the caprice of a Prince rendered brutal by every species of excess, particularly that of power; who passes his days locked up in his seraglio, without an idea of any thing beyond the walls of his palace. It may easily be conceived, that under such a government agriculture cannot flourish.

From the port of Mergin, situated on the western coast of this kingdom, to the capital, during a journey of ten or twelve days, you cross immense plains charmingly watered, and the soil excellent; some of which appear to have been formerly tilled, but now lie quite uncultivated. This journey travellers are under the necessity of making in caravans, in order to defend themselves from the tygers and elephants to which this fine country is in a manner entirely abandoned during a journey of eight

Digitized by Google

eight days, there ſcarcely being the veſtige of a habitation.

The environs of the capital are cultivated: the lands belonging to the King, thoſe of the Princes, the miniſters, and principal officers, diſplaying the amazing fertility of the country, producing, as I have been aſſured, an increaſe of two hundred fold.

THE MALAIS.] Beyond the kingdom of Siam is the peninſula of Malacca, a country formerly well peopled, and conſequently well cultivated. This nation was once one of the greateſt powers, and made a very conſiderable figure on the theatre of Aſia. The ſea was covered with their ſhips, and they carried on a moſt extenſive commerce. From time to time they ſent out numbers of colonies, which, one after another, peopled the iſlands of Sumatra, Java, Borneo, the Celebes, or Macaſſor, the Moluccas, the Philippines, and thoſe innumerable iſlands of the Archipelago, which bound Aſia on the eaſt, and which occupy an extent of ſeven hundred leagues in longitude from eaſt to weſt, by about ſix hundred of latitude from north to ſouth.

The inhabitants of all theſe iſlands, thoſe at leaſt upon the coaſts, are the ſame people; they ſpeak almoſt the ſame language, have the ſame laws, and the ſame manners.

Travellers, who make obſervations on the Malais, are aſtoniſhed to find in the center of Aſia, under the ſcorching climate of the line, the laws, the manners, the cuſtoms, and the prejudices of the ancient inhabitants of the north of Europe. The Malais are governed by feudal laws. With theſe laws they are reſtleſs, fond of navigation, war, plunder, emigrations, colonies, deſperate enterprizes, adventures, and gallantry. They talk inceſſantly of their honour, and their bravery, whilſt they

Digitized by Google

they are univerſally conſidered by thoſe with whom they have intercourſe, as the moſt treacherous ferocious people on the face of the globe; and yet, which appeared to me extremely ſingular, they ſpeak the ſofteſt language of Aſia.

The lands poſſeſſed by the Malais, are in general of a ſuperior quality. Nature ſeems to have taken pleaſure in there aſſembling her moſt favourite productions. They have not only thoſe to be found in the territories of Siam, but a variety of others peculiar to theſe iſlands. The country is covered with odoriferous woods, ſuch as the eagle or aloes wood, the ſandal, and the Caſſia odorata, a ſpecies of cinnamon. You there breathe an air impregnated with the odours of innumerable flowers of the greateſt fragrance, of which there is a perpetual ſucceſſion the year round, the ſweet flavour of which captivates the ſoul, and inſpires the moſt voluptuous ſenſations. No traveller, wandering over the plains of Malacca, but feels himſelf ſtrongly impelled to wiſh his reſidence fixed in a place ſo luxuriant in allurements, where nature triumphs without the aſſiſtance of art.

JAVA.] The Javaneſe begin to recover from that ſtate of anarchy, the conſequence of their ancient laws now almoſt no longer remembered. They cultivate with ſucceſs rice, coffee, indigo, and ſugar-cane. They rear on the eaſtern coaſt of the iſland, and in the diſtricts of Madur and Solor in the neighbourhood, numerous herds of buffaloes of a monſtrous ſize: their fleſh is excellent, and they are of infinite uſe in labouring the ground. They have likewiſe numbers of horned cattle, the largeſt and fineſt perhaps in the world.

KINGDOM OF PONTHIAMAS.] Departing from the peninſula of Malacca, and the iſlands of the Malais, towards the north, I fell in with a ſmall terri-

Digitized by Google

territory called Cancar, but known on the marine charts under the name of Ponthiamas, ſurrounded by the kingdom of Siam, where depotiſm and depopulation go hand-in-hand; the dominions of Cambaya, where no idea of eſtabliſhed government ſubſiſt; and the territories of the Malais, whoſe genius, perpetually agitated by their feudal laws, can endure peace neither at home nor abroad. This charming country, about fifty years ago, was uncultivated, and almoſt deſtitute of inhabitants.

A Chineſe merchant, commander of a veſſel which he employed in commerce, frequented theſe coaſts. Being a man of that intelligent reflective genius, which ſo characteriſtically marks his nation, he could not, without pain, behold immenſe tracts of ground condemned to ſterility, though naturally more fertile than thoſe which formed the riches of his own country; he formed, therefore, a plan for their improvement. With this view, having firſt of all hired a number of labourers, ſome Chineſe, others from the neighbouring nations, he, with great addreſs, inſinuated himſelf into the favour of the moſt powerful Princes, who, for a certain ſubſidy, aſſigned him a guard for his protection.

In the courſe of his voyages to Batavia and the Philippine iſlands, he borrowed from the Europeans their moſt uſeful diſcoveries and improvements, particularly the art of fortification and defence. With regard to internal police, he gave the preference to the Chineſe. The profits of his commerce ſoon enabled him to raiſe ramparts, ſink ditches, and provide artillery.

He diſtributed the lands to his labourers, without the leaſt reſervation of any of thoſe duties or taxes known by the names of Services or Fines of Alienation. Informing a labouring and commercial people he thought that no laws ought to be framed, but

Digitized by Google

but thoſe which nature has eſtabliſhed for the human race in every climate: he made theſe laws reſpected by obeying them firſt himſelf, and exhibiting an example of ſimplicity, induſtry, frugality, humanity, and good faith.

His territories ſoon became the reſidence of every induſtrious man who crowded to ſettle there. His port was open to all nations. The woods were cleared, the grounds judiciouſly laboured and ſown with rice; and canals, cut from the rivers, watered their fields.

The ſage Kiang-tſe (the name of this judicious Chineſe) perſuaded that he ſhould be always rich if his labourers were ſo, eſtabliſhed only a very moderate duty on all the merchandize entered at his port; the produce of his lands appearing to him ſufficient to render him powerful and great. His integrity, his moderation, and his humanity made him reſpected. He never wiſhed to reign, but only to eſtabliſh the empire of reaſon. His ſon, who now fills his place, inherits his virtues as well as his poſſeſſions: by agriculture, and the commerce he carries on with the produce of his lands, he has become ſo powerful, that the barbarians, his neighbours, ſtile him King: a title which he deſpiſes.

CAMBAYA AND ISIAMPA.] To the northward of Ponthiamas we find theſe countries. They are naturally fertile (Cambaya in particular) and appear in former times to have been well cultivated. Travellers are ſurpriſed to find, at a little diſtance from the wretched canton of Cambaya, the ruins of an old city, built with ſtone, the architecture of which has ſome reſemblance to that of Europe. The neighbouring fields too, ſtill preſerve the traces of ridges: every thing ſhews that agriculture and the other arts have once flouriſhed there; but they have now diſappeared with the nation who cultivated them. Thoſe who at preſent inhabit

bit this country have no hiſtory, no tradition even, which can throw the faintest light upon the ſubject.

COCHIN CHINA.] The Cochin Chineſe, who border on Camboya to the north, obſerving the lands of this kingdom deſolate and abandoned, ſome years ago took poſſeſſion of it.

The Cochin Chineſe cultivate ſix different ſorts of rice; among which are two ſorts, which grow in dry ſoils like our wheat. One of theſe ſpecies of rice has a grain as white as ſnow; when dreſſed it is of a ſlimy viſcous ſubſtance. They cultivate the ground with the ſpade, and ſow it as we do wheat. In the years 1749 and 1750, I often travelled over the mountains of Cochin China, where this rice is cultivated; they are very high, and the temperature of the air cold: in the month of January 1750, I obſerved that the rice was very green, and above three inches high, although the liquor in Reaumur's thermometer was only about four degrees above the freezing point. I carried ſome quintals of this grain to the iſle of France, where it was ſown with ſucceſs.

They cultivate much ſugar in Cochin China. The white of the beſt quality is generally ſold at the port of Faiſo, in exchange for other merchandize, at the rate of fourteen ſhillings Engliſh the Cochin China quintal, which weighs from one hundred and ſixty to two hundred and twenty pound Engliſh. The trade in this commodity is immenſe. The Chineſe alone purchaſe annually above forty thouſand barrels, weighing about two thouſand pounds per barrel.

The Cochin Chineſe cultivate alſo the cotton-tree, mulberry, varniſh-tree, and the date-trees, with tea, the indigo, pepper, ſaffron, together with a plant peculiar to the country, called *Tſai*, which

Digitized by Google

which being fermented like indigo, furniſhes in great plenty a flower of a green colour, which in dyeing, gives a durable tincture of a fine emerald colour.

Their mountains produce the cinnamon, in ſmall quantities indeed, but much ſuperior in quality to that of Ceylon.

The Cochin Chineſe are hoſpitable, gentle, frugal, and induſtrious. There is not a beggar in the country; and robbery and murder unknown. A ſtranger may wander over the kingdom from one end to another (the capital excepted) without meeting the ſlighteſt inſult. A Cochin Chineſe traveller, who has not money ſufficient to defray his expences at an inn, enters the firſt houſe of the town or village he arrives at: nobody enquires his buſineſs; he ſpeaks to none, but waits in ſilence the hour of dinner: ſo ſoon as the rice is ſerved up, he modeſtly approaches, places himſelf at table along with the family, eats, drinks, and departs, without pronouncing a ſingle word, or any perſon's putting to him a ſingle queſtion.

The ſix firſt kings, founders of this monarchy, governed the nation as a father governs his family. They honoured and encouraged agriculture. They required from their ſubjects only a ſmall annual free gift, to defray the expence of their defenſive war, againſt their Tonquineſe enemies. But the preſent Prince has built a ſuperb palace, a league in circumference, ſurrounded by a wall of brick on the model of that of Pekin. Sixteen hundred pieces of cannon mounted around the palace, announce to the people the approaching loſs of their liberties and rights.

CHINA.] I now approach the period of my travels. I arrived at Canton, where ſubjects for admiration ariſe; the noiſe, the motion the croud augments; the water as well as land being every where co-

Digitized by Google

covered with multitudes. Aſtoniſhed at the amazing appearance, I enquired into the numbers of inhabitants of this city and ſuburbs; and after comparing different accounts, found that they muſt amount at leaſt to eight hundred thouſand ſouls. My ſurprize, however, is greatly increaſed, when I learn that to the northern of Canton, about five leagues up the river, is a village named *Tachan*, which contains five hundred thouſand inhabitants, and that every part of this great empire, extending about ſix hundred leagues from north to ſouth, and as much from eaſt to weſt, was peopled in the ſame proportion.

The Chineſe have no meadows natural nor artificial, and have not the leaſt conception of fallowing, never allowing their lands the ſlighteſt repoſe. The Chineſe labourer would conſider meadows of every denomination, as lands in a ſtate of nature. They ſow their lands all with grain, and give the preference to ſuch grounds, as we generally lay out in meadows. They affirm that a field ſown with grain, will yield as much ſtraw for the nouriſhment of cattle, as it would have produced of hay, beſides the additional advantage of the grain for the ſuſtenance of man.

The Chineſe uſe the ſame manures as we do, in order to reſtore to their grounds thoſe ſalts and juices, which an unintermitting production is perpetually conſuming. They are acquainted with marle; they employ alſo common ſalt, lime, aſhes, and all ſorts of animal dung; but above all, that which we throw into our rivers: they make great uſe of urine, which is carefully preſerved in every houſe, and ſold to advantage.

Where any kind of labour can be performed at a moderate price by men, it is a maxim with them never to employ animals. The ſteepeſt mountains

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

are rendered acceſſible: at Canton, and from one extremity of the empire to another, you obſerve mountains cut into terraces, repreſenting at a diſtance immenſe pyramids, divided into different ſtages, which ſeem to rear their heads to heaven.

THE

Digitized by Google

THE TOUR OF HOLLAND, DUTCH BRABANT, the AUSTRIAN NETHERLANDS, AND PART OF FRANCE;

Including a Deſcription of PARIS, and its Environs.

BY * * * * *.

JULY 29th I left London at four in the morning with two friends, and an Engliſh ſervant, and reached Harwich a little after one, the worſt of all places, with as bad an inn. We were ſoon attacked by a Clerk for thirteen ſhillings and ſixpence each for a permit, which proved of no other uſe than for a Dutchman to light his pipe with. Then the cuſtom-houſe officers inſiſted on their fees for rummaging our trunks. At laſt, after running this gauntlet of impoſition, we ſet ſail in the Prince of Orange, Captain Story, at half paſt ſix in the evening. The accomodations on board were very good, the cabbin large, and rather elegantly fitted up. In the morning the Captain waked us with the pleaſing news of being in ſight of Helvoet, were we landed about ten o'clock, and as ſoon as we had refreſhed *our-*

ſelves

Digitized by Google

ſelves with a diſh of tea, ſpent the remainder of the day in examining that little ſea-port.

It is ſituated in the iſland of Voorn, in the province of Holland. The harbour, which ſeems uncommonly ſafe, runs through the middle of the town, and projects, by the help of piers, about fifty yards into the main ocean. There was a grandeur in this attempt which does honour to the Dutch. The water at the pier-head is ninety feet deep; the piles are one hundred and forty feet long, and are driven thirty-five feet into the ſhore: the interſtices are filled with bavins, which are kept down with large ſtones brought from Norway. This harbour is full of ſhips: it is ſurrounded with a ſpacious quay, but the houſes are whimſically ugly, in a wretched ſtile, with narrow fronts, running up in gable-ends to a point, the window-ſhutters painted yellow or green. At the end of the harbour is a large baſon, which contains at preſent twelve men of war, lying in perfect ſecurity; but in the dock, I obſerved very few naval ſtores; and in the barracks, which are extremely neat, only two companies of ſoldiers. There are very pleaſant turfed walks on the ramparts, which are kept quite clean. So nice are theſe people, that at our hoſteſs's, Mrs. Wykham's, there is a little ſcale hangs upon the noſe of the boiler to catch the drops, leſt they ſhould fall upon the hearth, which is of poliſhed iron, and I narrowly eſcaped a beating from the chambermaid, for having my hair powdered in my bed-chamber.

We left Helvoet in a ſtage-waggon, which is the beſt conveyance the place affords, and even to get that, a little form is neceſſary. The Commiſſary upon receiving ſix ſtivers rang a bell, which ſummoned all the waggoners in the town, who threw dice for the fare. This vehicle is no better than a covered Engliſh cart. In this we travelled very ſlowly to the Brill.

Digitized by Google

ing many of his work
altered from Coppola
French; that on his
dieſel and imitated the
ſon his works at Gali
has left in France.

Here I determined t
ples by land, having
dred miles in the ſame
tisfied my ſeven ſailors
plenely happy with twe
civil and obliging fellow
the leaſt diſpute happe
tention to travellers is
mildneſs of their manne
flat noſe, thick eyebrow
their beards, I obſerve
the boaſted fidelity of

I now continued m
wards Otranto, which
Ilipoli on the Adriatic.
with olives: the fine
wool of this tract ar
about three thouſand in

From Otranto, I tr
The continuation of
ge Otranto, plainly ap
ground, and in deſtroyed
way is Martanna, a p
greatly have kept their
language. The villages
are the fineſt in Italy,
are built of a white ſto
whole country is ſo beau
ſome reſemblance of a co

Next to Naples, Le
in the kingdom;
city.

Digitized by Google

is as neat as any private houſe in
I was amazed to find girls con-
ſonment for five, ten, and ſome
years, only for fornication. We
uyte to Rotterdam, one of the
rnies in Holland, from the num-
lens and pleaſant houſes on the
ils. That city lies about fifteen
a. It is in trade inferior only to
in the ſpaciouſneſs of the ſtreets,
e houſes far beyond it: the ca-
of two or three hundred tons to
the merchants. And no ſight can
non than the mixture of maſts,
ees, ſo that one can hardly tell
wn, a fleet, or a foreſt. The beſt
Quay, which lies on the Maes;
o that river, and the other orna-
nd façade of the beſt houſes in the
bited by Engliſh: it is broad and
uble row of trees: over the river
meadows. The exchange, finiſhed
neſt building.
dam, we returned to Delft in the
he canal from thence to Ryſwick
ows of elms. There is nothing
tion in that palace. The Prince
there for half an hour, and amuſes
urſing hares in a court within a
yards ſquare. A pretty recreation!
we walked to the Hague, which is

a village, the Hague is the reſi-
foreign Ambaſſadors, the ſeat of
, without diſpute, the moſt beau-
earth. It is totally ſurrounded by
hich are many bridges, and a row
rders it. The ſtreets are ſo ſpacious,

Digitized by Google

That place is larger than Helvoet, and tolerably fortified. The buildings are old, but the ſtreets regular and ſpacious. It is ſeated at the mouth of the Maes, which is a mile and a half wide. There is a tolerable trade carried on, but not equal to what it once was. There are twelve companies of ſoldiers quartered here. From the Brill we paſſed the Maes in a ferry-boat to Boor Iſland, a place of inconſiderable extent, but ſupports ſix hundred head of cattle. We paſſed this iſland in a cart, and croſſing another branch of the Maes, came to Maeſland Sluice, eſteemed one of the prettieſt villages in Holland. It is extenſive and well built, with canals running through every ſtreet: though this place is filled with ſcarcely any thing but fiſhermen, yet it is as clean as hands can make it.

From hence we went in the treckſchuyte to Delft. This barge is drawn by one horſe, and goes four miles an hour. In fine weather this way of travelling is delightful; for a trifle you may hire the *roef*, which is a ſmall cabin at the end of the boat, with two ſaſh-windows on each ſide, a table in the middle, velvet cuſhions to ſit on, and a good room for ſix or eight people.

We dined at the Docle, an excellent inn, and after dinner walked about the place: the ſtreets are wide, and ornamented with trees and canals, and many ſtone bridges. The inhabitants are wealthy, but conſiſt chiefly of perſons retired from trade. There is very little commerce here, and the manufactory of earthen-ware is quite decayed, owing to the vaſt import of China by the India Company.

The greateſt armory and magazine of Holland is kept here, but there is nothing extraordinary in it. The ſteeple of the new church is the fineſt in the Low Countries; and the chimes, which play every quarter of an hour, are very pleaſing.

The

Digitized by Google

The bridewell is as neat as any private houſe in England. Here I was amazed to find girls condemned to impriſonment for five, ten, and ſome even for twenty years, only for fornication. We took the treckſchuyte to Rotterdam, one of the moſt agreeable journies in Holland, from the number of little gardens and pleaſant houſes on the banks of the canals. That city lies about fifteen miles from the ſea. It is in trade inferior only to Amſterdam, but in the ſpaciouſneſs of the ſtreets, and elegance of the houſes far beyond it: the canals admit ſhips of two or three hundred tons to the very doors of the merchants. And no ſight can be more uncommon than the mixture of maſts, chimneys, and trees, ſo that one can hardly tell whether it be a town, a fleet, or a foreſt. The beſt ſtreet is the Bomb Quay, which lies on the Maes; one ſide is open to that river, and the other ornamented with a grand façade of the beſt houſes in the city, chiefly inhabited by Engliſh: it is broad and planted with a double row of trees: over the river are ſome beautiful meadows. The exchange, finiſhed in 1736, is the fineſt building.

Leaving Rotterdam, we returned to Delft in the treckſchuyte. The canal from thence to Ryſwick is ſkirted with rows of elms. There is nothing worthy of obſervation in that palace. The Prince ſometimes comes there for half an hour, and amuſes himſelf with courſing hares in a court within a wall about fifty yards ſquare. A pretty recreation! In the evening we walked to the Hague, which is two miles.

Though only a village, the Hague is the reſidence of all the foreign Ambaſſadors, the ſeat of government, and, without diſpute, the moſt beautiful place upon earth. It is totally ſurrounded by a canal, over which are many bridges, and a row of lofty trees borders it. The ſtreets are ſo ſpacious,

Digitized by Google

with ſo much water and trees in them, that they have hardly the appearance of a town; and there are ſo many ſquares and public places laid out in ſhady walks, and ſurrounded with ſuch magnificent buildings, that it beggars all deſcription. The Vyverburg, a kind of ſquare, has I think the preeminence. On one ſide is a row of magnificent houſes, and on the other a baſon of water faced with ſtone, two hundred yards long, and one hundred broad, and in the center an iſland planted. The moſt elegant building in the place is the new houſe of the Prince of Yeelburgh, who is married to the Prince of Orange's ſiſter. The new Princeſs Graft, is a row of palaces rather than houſes, which front the wood from which they are divided by a broad pavement and a canal.

One of the greateſt curioſities here is the Prince's cabinet, which is open at twelve o'clock on Fridays, and acceſſible to all ſtrangers, who previouſly ſend their names. It is a great collection of curioſities natural and artificial. In the palace of the Stadtholder, is a very fine collection of pictures, chiefly by the Dutch and Flemiſh maſters. A little room in it called The Study, is filled with moſt capital pieces.

We viewed the houſe in the wood, but it contains nothing remarkable. We walked to Scheveling, a fiſhing-village, by a ſtrait paved and planted road. Here we viewed the Portland gardens, which are extenſive and elegant, laid out in the Engliſh ſtile. The owner's ſon, Mr. Bentinck, is now a Captain of an Engliſh man of war.

From the Hague we went to Leyden in the treckſchuyte, with a Dutch General we had lived with at the table d'hote at the Hague; the diſtance is ten miles, but the whole canal being lined with ſummer-houſes and pleaſure-gardens, made the ſcene very beautiful. In ſize, Leyden is the ſecond city in Holland, but its trade, which formerly was conſider-

Digitized by Google

ſiderable in woollen cloths, is now inconſiderable. The broad ſtreet is the moſt elegant in Leyden; it is a little on the curve, which adds to its beauty: the pavement is very fine, riſing in the center like the new paved ſtreets of London: the univerſity is the moſt renowned of the five Dutch ones.

Leaving Leyden, we proceeded by the canal to Harlem, from which we ſaw the turf-pits: they ſeem full of water, and not likely to ſupply forty thouſand people, as they do, with fuel. Harlem in 1732 contained between forty and fifty thouſand people. In the church is an organ ſuperior to any thing of the kind in Europe. The trade of this place conſiſts chiefly in bleaching of linen. The Holland and Cambrick made in Flanders, and great quantities of fine Iriſh are ſent there to be whitened, the ſlimey water of the Meer being acknowledged ſuperior to all others for this purpoſe. They have alſo conſiderable manufactures of velvet and ſilk, which they vend chiefly at Leipſick and Hamburgh.

In the evening we proceeded in the treckſchuyte to Amſterdam. When we landed at that city, we found the ſtench inſufferable from the canals and common-ſewers. This city is fortified with a foſſé of great depth and width; with a rampart of earth faced with brick, ſtrengthened with twenty-ſix baſtions, on each of which ſtands a wind-will. In all the chief ſtreets are canals ſhaded with trees. The ſquares are neither ſpacious nor elegant; the Dam is the largeſt, in which the ſtadthouſe is built. The ſtreets that have not canals are vilely narrow. The city in 1732 contained twenty-ſix thouſand thirty-five houſes, and is calculated to have at preſent two hundred and fifty thouſand inhabitants.

Much the greater building is the ſtadthouſe, which you enter by ſeven ſmall gates, parallel to each other, inſtead of a magnificent portal, equal to a front of two hundred and eighty-two feet, whoſe height is

Digitized by Google

one hundred and ſixteen, and the breadth two hundred and thirty-two. It is built of ſtone, on thirteen thouſand ſix hundred and fifty-nine piles of timber, and was finiſhed in 1655. The piles alone coſt one hundred thouſand pounds, the whole expence being computed at two millions. Verſailles coſt only eight hundred thouſand pounds. The Eſcurial one million, and Saint Paul's one million five hundred thouſand pounds. But it is upon record that Saint Peter's at Rome, with all that is contained in it, has coſt near thirteen million ſterling.

The cornices of the rooms are finely carved, the floors with marble, and the walls lined either with the ſame or valuable paintings. Over the doors and chimney-pieces are ſeveral hiſtorical pieces in baſſo relievo, inimitably executed in Italian marble. A Feaſt, given by the Burgomaſters of the City to the Spaniſh Ambaſſador, by Vandyke, is one of his moſt famous performances. Another Entertainment, by Vanderhelſt, is inimitably executed.

In this building is kept the bank, ſuppoſed to be the richeſt in Europe; the courts of juſtice, the publick priſons, the chambers of the ſenate, the treaſury, the magazine of arms, and in a word all the public offices. There are eight large ciſterns of water on the top, with pipes to every room to extinguiſh fires. The greateſt apartment is the citizens hall, being one hundred and twenty feet by fifty-ſeven, and ninety high: it is paved with marble.

The Exchange is not to be compared to that of Rotterdam. We went to the play-houſe: the pit is excellent, having ſeats with low backs, and marked with numbers, by which both crowding and diſputes are prevented. The whole is under the direction of the magiſtrates, who receive the money, pay the expences, and apply the profits to the maintenance of the poor. We alſo viſited the Raſp-houſe, which

Digitized by Google

which is a priſon of labour for criminals: they are chained to a block, and ſpend their whole time in ſawing or raſping Brazil wood. In the new church we ſaw a burial, and were ſurpriſed to find that they lay aſide the ceremony of prayers as ſuperfluous, putting the coffin inſtantly into the grave, which is immediately filled up, upon which the relations bow, and return to their avocations.

From hence we proceeded to the admiralty and dock-yard, which are ſituated at the end of the quay. The admiralty is built round three ſides of a ſquare, on the other it is open to the water, and in the area is the yard for building men of war.

Among the hoſpitals, the Gaſthouſe for the ſick is the moſt conſiderable: it is an elegant ſtone quadrangle: its revenue is eighty thouſand pounds ſterling a year.

Aug. 13th we left Amſterdam, taking the treckſchuyte for Utrecht, which is a moſt elegant town without any publick building to attract a ſtranger's notice. The houſes are magnificent, the ſtreets are ſpacious, and the environs delightful. It is larger than the Hague, and fortified with a rampart. The mall is the fineſt in Europe; three quarters of a mile long, and has a treble row of trees on each ſide the grand walk.

From Utrecht we went to Breda, by a mode of travelling changed much for the worſe. We were obliged to hire a coach and four: the diſtance is only forty-two miles, yet we were eleven hours on the road, and paid five pounds for the miſerable conveyance. For twelve miles from Utrecht the country is rich and pleaſant. On the other ſide the Maes it is very dreary; wide uncultivated commons, and heavy ſands. Breda is reckoned the ſtrongeſt town on the Dutch frontier next to Bergen.

From Breda we took another coach and four; which was ſix long hours conveying us twenty-one

Digitized by Google

miles, over deep ſands and barren commons, to Bergen-op-zoom, the laſt and ſtrongeſt fortreſs in Dutch Brabant. The fortifications were all we viewed here. The ſame heavy ſands and dreary waſtes held us till we were near Antwerp, ſituated on the eaſtern ſhore of the Scheld; a noble river, twenty feet deep at low water, ſo that ſhips of great burthen may unload upon the quays, or enter the town by eight canals which communicate with the river: ſome are large enough to contain a hundred ſail of ſhips.

Though greatly decayed from its former grandeur, Antwerp is yet a beautiful place: it is ſeven miles in circumference. The top of the wall is one hundred feet broad, with a double row of trees. The ſtreets are well paved, very ſpacious and uniform; but the houſes are very high, but old, and in the Dutch ſtile. The citadel is a quarter of a mile from it, commanding at once the city, the river, and the adjacent country. So late as the middle of the ſixteenth century, Antwerp contained two hundred thouſand ſouls; two thouſand five hundred ſhips were often in the river at a time, and five hundred veſſels have gone in or out of the harbour in a day.

The city contains a great number of magnificent churches full of valuable paintings. Among theſe the cathedral of Notre Dame is the fineſt. Here is The Deſcent from the Croſs, by Rubens; the figures as large as life, and the whole admirably done. The Fall of Angels, by Floris, is another excellent performance. Saint Ann, ſurrounded by Women and Children, by Coxie, is a moſt pleaſing piece. The church is as rich in marble as in pictures: it is five hundred feet long by two hundred and thirty broad, and the ſpire is four hundred and ſixty-ſix feet high, and eſteemed the fineſt in the world.

The jeſuits church is a beautiful piece of architecture, in which ſcarce a fault can be found when examined

Digitized by Google

examined by the ſevereſt rules: it is lined with marble throughout: there are alſo many paintings in it. In the church of Saint Waldburg there is a very fine altar-piece, by Rubens, the Erection of the Croſs. The fineſt convent in the city is that of the Dominicans; the refectory is covered with pictures capitally done by Quillin. In the church the Adoration of the Magi, by Rubens, is exceedingly fine. The apartments of the Abbot are worthy of a prince.

Aug. 19th we left Antwerp, and dined at Mechlin, which is midway between Antwerp and Bruſſels. The ſtreets of this town are tolerably wide, the market-place large, but the houſes old and badly built. In Saint John's church they ſhew two very fine pictures, one the Adoration of the Magi, and Herodias with Saint John's Head in a Charger, both by Rubens; another by the ſame maſter is, Saint John throwing into a Cauldron of boiling Oil. In the church of Nôtre Dame, the miraculous Draught of Fiſhes, by the ſame hand, is an admirable piece. The façade of the jeſuits church is the moſt beautiful in the city, and it contains many very fine pictures. Having ſeen moſt things at Mechlin we ſet forward for Bruſſels: the whole road from Antwerp thither is delightful; a ſpacious pavement ſhaded with double rows of trees, with the river Senne by the ſide for the laſt ſix miles, with many neat villas and pleaſant gardens.

We went to the theatre at Bruſſels, where Bellcour, the great French comedian, performed with great applauſe. Some of the boxes reſemble cloſets, from which you ſee the ſtage, but are not ſeen yourſelves, unleſs you chuſe to ſit forward: theſe have chimnies, and it is common for the proprietors of theſe boxes, who are the firſt nobility, to have a deſert and wine in them for themſelves and friends. While at Bruſſels we dined at the table d'Hote,

Digitized by Google

where we met with many agreeable people. Bruſſels is about four miles in circumference, ſurrounded with a wall, and tolerably fortified. The low town has the benefit of canals, which admit boats of burthen. The country around Bruſſels is moſt delightful to the eye, and exceedingly rich; for land within ten miles of the city lets at three pounds ſterling an acre, and ſells at forty years purchaſe.

The churches here are much inferior to thoſe of Antwerp. The palace, in which Prince Charles of Lorain reſides, who is Governor of the Auſtrian Netherlands, is not finiſhed. The ſtaircaſe is very magnificent: the ſteps are of marble, and the balluſtrade of iron gilt, with compartments of birds and beaſts executed in poliſhed ſteel. The Princeſſes's apartment is hung with Bruſſels tapeſtry, which, though brought to much perfection, is not equal to the Gobelins. The floors are all inlaid with mahogany and box. The cabinet of the Princeſs is covered throughout with the fineſt japan.

We were admitted to ſee the collection of Mr. ——— a private gentleman of a moſt whimſical turn. He has not been out of his houſe theſe three and twenty years, thinking that the open air would kill him at once. He has many very fine pictures. Two hermits by Teniers are remarkable. The Purification, by Carracci. Chriſt, and the Man ſtruck with the Palſy, by Vandyke. An old Man, by Titian. Rembrandt, by himſelf. A Game-piece, by Snyders, in which is a hedge-hog perfectly alive. A Scripture-piece, by Rubens, in which are his three wives, coſt two thouſand guineas. Another admirable Game-piece, by Snyders. A Battle by Vandermulen.

The 24th of Auguſt we left Bruſſels, and breakfaſted at Aloſt, and got by dinner to Ghent, a large town with ſpacious ſtreets and regular buildings, ſtrongly

Digitized by Google

ſtrongly fortified. The Abbey of Saint Pierre is much the fineſt thing in this place: it conſiſts of an abbot and thirty-ſeven Benedictine monks. The refectory is ſuperb, and fitter for a palace than a convent, paved with black-and-white marble, and finely painted. The library is equally magnificent. In the church is a Crucifixion, by Vandyke, highly valued. The Abbot's apartment is ſumptuous: Prince Charles of Lorain, when at Ghent, always reſides in it. The number of fine pictures is very great. Three, by Rubens, are particularly excellent: Joſeph, with the Infant Chriſt, and two heads of old men. In the cathedral, the monument of Biſhop Trieſt, by Fiaringo, is moſt admirably executed; the boys are equal to thoſe in the monument of Cardinal Richlieu at the Sorbonne.

The 25th we left Ghent in a boat drawn by two horſes, more agreeable than the Dutch treckſchuytes, as it has an awning over the end of the deck, where one ſits very much at eaſe below: there are two ſeparate apartments, one elegantly fitted up for the better company; alſo a kitchen where they dreſs you a good dinner at ſo mueh a head. I do not remember ſpending a more agreeable day. In the evening we arrived at Bruges. The ſtreets of that city are wide, and the houſes tolerably built. From thence we went to Courtray, a place of conſiderable ſize, with a large market-place, and ſome good ſtreets. From Courtray we went to Menin, and from thence, entering French Flanders, to Liſle; a place highly deſerving the attention of travellers for the extent of the fortifications, and the beauty and regularity of the buildings. It is ſurrounded with a treble ditch; the ramparts are faced with ſtone of enormous ſize, covered with cannon and full of mines. The ſtreets are ſpacious, and well paved. The Rue Royale is a mile long, perfectly ſtrait and ſixteen ſteps wide.

There

Digitized by Google

There are fifty churches in Liſle. The fineſt picture in the place is in the chapel of the Recollects, a Crucifixion by Vandyke.

The 30th of Auguſt we got into the Diligence for Paris. We breakfaſted at Douay, a large place with good ſtreets, but bad houſes. From thence we went to Cambray by dinner. We paſſed Perrone and Senlis, in the neighbourhood of which the King was hunting, and was to return through the town to Verſailles in the evening. So careful were the people, that all the ſigns were removed, leſt they ſhould fall on the King. There were reliefs of carriages and guards every ſix miles waiting on the road, which was covered by his numerous retinue.

The fields on each ſide the road were full of game, which were ſo tame, that they ſcarce moved for the carriages. At ſix in the evening we arrived at Paris, when we drove to the Hotel de l'Imperatrice in the Rue Jacob, in which we have an elegant dining-room, with two bed-chambers on the firſt floor, and another in the entreſol, with an apartment for the ſervant, for three guineas a week. For our coach we pay half a guinea a day, and a ſhilling to the coachman. We uſually dine at a table d'Hote, where we have a genteel company, and for twenty-pence a-head, have a ſumptuous dinner of two courſes of ſeven and five, with a deſert, and a pint of Burgundy.

Paris in form is circular, and ſurrounded with a wall. The ramparts, which extend more than half round the city, are ornamented with four rows of trees, in the center of which is a ſpacious road for carriages, and on each ſide ſhady walks, ſurrounded by many coffee-houſes, and places of public amuſement. Vauxhall, is at preſent the moſt faſhionable reſort: it is a new building, partaking both of Vauxhall and Ranelagh, but far inferior to either.

There

Digitized by Google

There is a rotunda about a fourth as large as Ranelagh.

As to the ſize of Paris, I have viewed it from the top of Nôtre Dame, and it appears to be not more than half as large as London and Weſtminſter. The ſtreets are contemptibly narrow; few equal to Drury Lane, and the generality inferior to the narrow part of the Strand. The houſes are ſix or ſeven ſtories high, and numbers inhabited by as many families, which accounts for the populouſneſs of this city. Yet there is much ground unbuilt upon; for the hotels of the Nobleſſe have court-yards in front, and large gardens. The Seine is an inconſiderable river; but the banks being faced with ſtone, and the parallel ſtreets with handſome fronts towards the water, have a very fine effect, eſpecially when contraſted with the coal-warfs and timber-yards of the Thames.

In the Luxembourgh palace, the famous gallery of Rubens is worthy of admiration: in twenty-four large pieces, that artiſt has painted the hiſtory of Mary of Medicis. But the gallery is too ſmall for the ſize of the pieces, and the light is ſo bad, that one can ſcarce ſee them. Among other pictures which ſtruck me the moſt, were, Rape of the Sabines, by N. Pouſſin; Roman Charity, by Guido; Job, by Rembrandt; the Infant Jeſus, the Virgin and Saint John, by Raphael, the fineſt picture in the whole collection; Chriſt driving the Money-changers out of the Temple, capital.

The grand façade of the Louvre towards the river can never be enough admired. It is of immenſe length, and has a fine effect from the oppoſite ſide of the river. The quadrangle at the eaſt end is now repairing, and the preſent King deſigns to complete this magnificent palace. The apartments are given to artiſts of merit to dwell in. I viewed

Digitized by Google

viewed the annual exhibition of pictures here, but they are very much inferior to the Engliſh artiſts.

The Thuilleries is another royal palace, joined to the Louvre by a gallery. The front is three hundred and twenty-ſix yards in length. The grand façade towards the gardens conſiſts of five pavilions, the center being adorned with the Ionic, Corinthian, and Compoſite orders. The columns of marble are fluted, and rendered very rich by olive-branches. The gardens are laid out with great regularity; the terrace is five hundred and ſixty yards long, and commands a good view of the river and the town.

The palace-royal belongs to the Duke of Orleans. The outſide is not fine, but the apartments are very magnificent. In every room are fine bronzes, rich tables, exquiſite cabinets, luſtres of rock cryſtal, porcelaine, &c. and the collection of paintings are admirable: among others here, is the Hiſtory of Æneas, by Coypel, inimitably done; Mars and Venus, by P. Veroneſe; the Death of Adonis, by ditto; the Virgin, with our Saviour and Saint John, by Raphael; the beſt in the whole collection: it is a very ſmall picture, and being in a gloomy room may eaſily be overlooked. A Holy Family; the Virgin holding the infant Jeſus in her arms, Iſaac ſtanding by, by Raphael, incomparably fine; Baptiſm of Chriſt, by Albano; Alexander drinking the Potion, by Le Sœur; Moſes ſtriking the Rock, by Pouſſin; Cupid bending the Bow, by Corregio; Venus bathing, by Titian; ſhe ſtands up to the knees only in water: never was there greater beauty, or more perfect ſymmetry.

The hotel of the Duke de V—— ſon of the famous Marſhal, but not to be compared to the father, is worth ſeeing. The gallery is chiefly to be admired; it is almoſt covered with pier-glaſſes of the largeſt ſize; the cornice and ceiling gilt in the richeſt manner.

There

Digitized by Google

There are ſome good pictures ſcattered in the principal churches of Paris, but it would be tedious to recapitulate them. The Sorbonne is viſited by every body, to ſee the tomb of Cardinal Richlieu, the *chef d'œuvre* of Girardon. He reclines on a mattraſs, clothed in a looſe robe of inimitable drapery.

The hoſpital of Invalids, founded by Louis XIV. conſiſts of five quadrangles, three ſtories high, ſurrounded with piazzas and open galleries over them, which have a very fine effect. The dome of the chapel is the nobleſt ſtructure in Paris.

The royal manufacture of the Gobelins is ſuperior to any thing of the kind. The work is done in a peculiar manner: inſtead of the threads being horizontal, they are perpendicular. The artiſts copy pictures, which hang before them, with the minuteſt exactneſs.

We took the opportunity of a Sunday to drive from Paris to Saint Cloud: in the way we paſſed the village of Paſſi, delightfully ſituated. Saint Cloud belongs to the Duke of Orleans: it is ſituated on the declivity of a mountain, waſhed by the Seine. The view from the houſe is delightful; you ſee the river in many places meandering through the vale. The gallery is a noble apartment, and the ſtatues and paintings in it well preſerved.

Our next trip was to Saint Denis, ſix miles from Paris, where the things which travellers view, are the church and the Benedictine convent. Our next viſit was Verſailles, where we firſt viewed the ſtables, magnificently built in form of a creſcent. There are ſtalls for five hundred horſes, but ſeparated only by bails; the inſide is dark and gloomy. The horſes, both for field and draught, are chiefly Engliſh. The front of the palace towards the garden is wonderfully magnificent, adorned with trophies, buſts, ſtatues, &c. the whole extent ſix hundred yards.

Digitized by Google

yards. In the center is a portico one hundred yards long, ſupported by marble pillars of excellent workmanſhip. You enter the apartments by a marble ſtaircaſe ten yards wide, which is as dirty as an alehouſe kitchen. From hence you paſs through a ſuite of rooms, where are the guards, into Le Brun's gallery, the ceiling of which contains the actions of Lewis XIV. by that painter. It is ſeventy-two yards long, having ſeventeen windows to the gardens, oppoſite which are the ſame number of looking-glaſſes, between which are antique ſtatues: thoſe of Diana and Germanicus are the moſt ſtriking. There are in the different apartments an infinite number of capital pictures. Among others which pleaſed me greatly, are, the Family of Darius at the Feet of Alexander, by Le Brun; the Apotheoſis of Hercules, by Le Moine; Saint Michael and the Devil, by Raphael; Saint Sebaſtian, by Vandyke; Hercules on the funeral Pile; Hercules fighting the Hydra; and the Centaur and Dejanira; all three by Guido. Much of the furniture is very rich; as, golden candleſticks, a chandelier of rock cryſtal, which can be penetrated only by a diamond; and a golden clock of curious mechaniſm.

The apartments are dirty, which cannot be wondered at; for all the world rove about the palace. I paſſed from room to room at will into the King's bed-chamber, dreſſing-room, &c. in all of which were numbers of people. The gardens are equally open to all; they contain a great profuſion of waterworks, ſtatues and marble. In front of the palace is a canal ſixteen hundred yards long, on which are many boats. The orangery covers an acre of ground: the trees are very fine and full of fruit; they are planted in tubs, but removed in ſevere weather.

At the end of the garden, on the right of the grand canal, is the beautiful little palace of Trianon, built in the Italian ſtile, only one ſtory high, but all of

Digitized by Google

of marble. The extent of the front is one hundred and twenty yards. From hence to Marli is a pleaſant walk of three ſhort miles; a ſmall palace built in an admirable táſte: the gardens are enchanting, the ſcenes pictureſque, and the water-works and ſtatues fine: among the latter are, a Venus de Medicis, with Cupid aſtride a Dolphin; alſo a group of two children and a goat, inexpreſſibly beautiful. Likewiſe the Venus aux Belles feſſes, which is all grace, ſymmetry, and elegant proportion.

From hence to Saint Germains is two miles; a palace ſituated on a lofty mountain waſhed by the Seine, and looking over a delightful country to Paris at the diſtance of twelve miles, through which a vaſt reach of the river is ſeen. A forreſt of ſix thouſand acres joins the palace, and there is a grand terrace of three thouſand paces, which commands the whole country. In the palace are a few fine pictures; Saint Louis giving Alms, by Le Brun. The Virgin, Jeſus, and Saint John, by Michael Angelo. The Virgin and a dead Chriſt, by Carracci.

Choiſi is a neat little hunting-box, ſix miles from Paris, on the banks of the Seine. The gardens are agreeable, and the apartments convenient. There is one dining-room, in which no ſervants wait: the table is ſo contrived, that none are neceſſary: when the firſt courſe is over the King ſtamps with his foot, the table diſappears, and another immediately riſes through the floor covered with diſhes. There are four dumb-waiters covered with wine: on each is a piece of paper and a pencil to write for what is wanted; when the waiter is let down and riſes the ſame as the table.

On the road we met the King's attendants, who told us he was to ſhoot there that day: we waited to ſee him. He came about noon in a coach with four of his nobles. He was attended by about two hundred

Digitized by Google

hundred horſemen and about forty or fifty chaſſeurs on foot, with guns. The Prince de Soubiſe, and the Count de la Marche, ſon of the Prince of Conti, were the only nobles permitted to ſhoot: they fired on horſeback: in leſs than two minutes after the King had left the highway, I ſaw hares and partridges out of number.

The moment the King had fired, another gun was put into his hand, which was inſtantly diſcharged. Out of his firſt thirty ſhots he miſſed but twice. He is proud of being eſteemed the beſt ſhot in the kingdom.

He regularly goes to maſs at eleven o'clock, and hunts or ſhoots from that time till five in the evening. The remainder of the day is ſpent at table, and in gaming with his nobility, till his favourite Sultana calls him to her bed.

From Paris I took the ſtage-coach to Rouen in Normandy, the fare of which is half-a-guinea, but it is two days and an half going ninety miles. This coach carries ten paſſengers, and has two immenſe baſkets, covered with ſail-cloth, for parcels; one before, the other behind. It is drawn by eight horſes, drove by a coachman and poſtilion, who walk on foot, and goes three miles an hour.

The inhabitants of Rouen, which is the third city of France, are computed at ſixty thouſand. They are very induſtrious. The greateſt curioſity is the bridge of boats two hundred and ſeventy yards long, paved with ſtone, which riſes and falls with the tide.

Having returned to Paris, I left that city a ſecond time for Calais on the 24th of September. We took Chantilly, a caſtle belonging to the Prince of Conde, in our way. The caſtle is triangular: within is a ſpacious court, and without a large moat: the approach is over a draw-bridge, and it is defended by cannon. The apartments are ſmall, and the communications from

Digitized by Google

from one room to another, exceedingly awkward. The billiard and muſic-rooms are fitted up in the richeſt manner. The cabinet of curioſities is ſuperior to any private collection I have ſeen. The gardens are full of orange-trees, jet d'eaus, and water-works. The park is diverſified with water-bridges, wilderneſſes, ſtatues, temples, &c. The Menagerie is very extenſive, but ill ſtocked. The walls are covered with green lattice-work, between which variety of flowers are interwoven ſo as entirely to conceal the wall. A moſt elegant refinement!

The ſtables are more magnificent than a palace, and worthy of a Prince whoſe domains are an hundred miles in circumference. They form a quadrangle built of the fineſt ſtone: one ſide is a ſtable containing two hundred and forty Engliſh horſes. The Prince often drives through his ſtables in his carriage when he comes to ſee his ſtud. The menage is equally grand: it forms a rotund of prodigious extent, but is left open to the ſky. There was an infinite variety of carriages for ſtate, convenience, and the chace.

From Chantilly we went to Clermont, where we ſlept. Next day we dined at Amiens, the capital of Picardy: the inhabitants are thirty-five thouſand, and wear a face of induſtry not often ſeen in an inland town in France. At length we arrived at Calais. The Chantilly road is in every reſpect diſagreeable; up hill and down, dirty, ill-paved, and the country open; ſcarce a hedge to be ſeen. No carriages on the road, no gentlemens ſeats, few towns, and but now and then a ſtraggling village ſwarming with beggars.

The town of Calais is ſmall, the ſtreets are narrow, and the fortifications trifling.

Upon the whole, I have to obſerve of France, that I take the climate to be the moſt healthy, the ſoil the moſt fruitful, and the face of the country the moſt pleaſing

pleaſing in the univerſe; but I hope its inhabitants are the vaineſt. In the mechanic arts they are at leaſt a century behind the Engliſh. In their tapeſtry, looking-glaſſes, and coach-varniſh, they are confeſſedly our ſuperiors; but their carriages are no better than our dung-carts; their inns not equal to an Engliſh alehouſe; their floors, both above and below, chiefly of brick, and without carpets; their windows without pullies: for tables they have planks nailed together. Their gardens conſiſt of ſand-walks in ſtrait lines between yew-hedges, and parterres tortured into form. They are ſuch ſlaves to faſhion, that they have eight different ſeaſons in the year for dreſs, which is carried to ſuch exceſs, that they deſcend to the minutiæ of a ruffle: a man's character would be ruined were not the lace of his ruffles adapted to the ſeaſon of the year.

In every branch of agriculture their farmers are incredibly deficient; but this is no wonder, when it is conſidered that the land-taxes fall heavy on them from the exemptions of the nobility and clergy. The gabel on ſalt is alſo very heavy; every family being obliged to buy, in proportion of two and a half buſhels to ten people, which, if not conſumed within the year muſt not be ſold. Add to this, that the Seignior, or Lord, (for all lands are held by vaſſalage) exacts *ad arbitrium* from his tenants. Hence ariſes the miſery ſo conſpicuous in every farm. I have often ſeen a half-ſtarved cow and an aſs plowing in the ſame yoke; and I have heard it aſſerted as a fact, that a pig and an aſs ſometimes plow together. In ſome of the provinces the little farmers, who have no barns, are obliged to thraſh their corn out in the fields; and for want of money to buy waggons, they carry both corn and hay on the backs of their cattle.

In the whole city of Paris there is not a flat ſtone to walk on, nor a poſt to guard you from the carriages,

Digitized by Google

riages, which are so numerous, and the streets so narrow, that the foot-passengers are for ever in danger. The lamps hang in the center of the streets, on cords, which are fixed to the opposite houses. To light a lamp is the business of two men. To shoe a little bidet is also the business of two; one smith holds the horse's hoof, while another drives the nail.

The police of France, so much admired by travellers, is in many instances wonderfully deficient. The whole kingdom swarms with beggars; crouds of these wretches are met at every inn. Though no turnpikes, yet the roads are excellent, made so by the labour of the peasants, to whom may be said as to Virgil's bees, *Sic vos non vobis.*

The religion of the French seems rather calculated for amusement than devotion: it consists of trumpery saints and tinsel ornaments: the number of their prayers is much regarded; the Virgin Mary is adored, whilst the Saviour of mankind is almost unnoticed. The priests are generally ignorant of Greek, but taught the Latin, which they chatter over, and call it Divine Service, which is performed in Latin; but it should be understood by the congregation.

The number of miles in the whole tour is nine hundred and fifty-one. The conveyance of three gentlemen and one servant amounts to seventy-three pounds ten shillings. Absent from England nine weeks, three of which were spent at Paris.

END OF THE FIFTH VOLUME.

Digitized by Google

PLAYS, *printed for* T. LOWNDES, at 6d. each.

A Bramule, by Dr. Trapp
Adventures of Half an Hour
Albion and Albanius, by Dryden
Alchymiſt, by Ben Johnſon
Alcibiades, by Otway
All for Love, by Dryden
Ambitious Step-mother, by Rowe
Amboyna, by Dryden
Amphitryon, by Dryden
Anatomiſt, by Ravenſcroft
Anna Bullen, by Bankes
As you like it, by Shakeſpeare
Artful Huſband, by Taverner
Athaliah, by Mr. Duncomb
Aurengzebe, by Dryden
Bartholomew Fair, by Ben Johnſon
Baſſet Table, by Centlivre
Beaux Stratagem, by Farquhar
Beggars Opera, by Gay
Biter, by Rowe
Bold Stroke for a Wife
Britiſh Enchanters, by Lanſdown
Buſiris, by Dr. Young
Buſy Body, by Centlivre
Caius Marius, by Otway
Careleſs Huſband, by Cibber
Cataline, by Ben Johnſon
Cato, by Addiſon
Chances, by D. Buckingham
Chaplet, by Mr. Mendez
Cleomenes, by Dryden
Cobler of Preſton
Comedy of Errors, by Shakeſpeare
Conſcious Lovers, by Cibber
Committee, by Sir R Howard
Confederacy, by Vanbrugh
Conſcious Lovers, by Steele
Conſtant Couple, by Farquhar
Contrivances, by Carey
Country Laſſes, by C. Johnſon
Country Wife, by Wycherly
Cymbeline, altered by Mr. Garrick
Damon and Phillida, by Mr. Dibden
Devil of a Wife
Devil to pay, by Coffey
Diſtreſſed Mother, by Amb. Phillips
Don Carlos, by Otway
Double Dealer, by Congreve
Double Gallant, by Cibber
Dragon of Wantley
Drummer, by Addiſon
Duke and no Duke, by Sir A. Cockain
Duke of Guiſe, by Dryden
Earl of Eſſex, by Bankes
Every Man in his Humour
Fair Penitent, by Rowe
Fair Quaker of Deal, by C. Shadwell
Falſe Friend
Fatal Curioſity
Fatal Secret, by Theobald
Flora, or Hob in the Well
Fox, by Ben Johnſon
Friendſhip in Faſhion, by Otway

Funera

Digitized by Google

Funeral, by Sir R. Steele
Gameſter, by Mrs. Centlivre
Gentle Shepherd
George Barnwell, by Lillo
Gloriana
Greenwich Park
Hamlet, by Shakeſpeare
Henry IV. 2 Parts, by ditto
Henry V. by ditto
Henry VI. 3 Parts, by ditto
Henry VIII. by ditto
Henry V. by Aaron Hill
Honeſt Yorkſhireman
Jane Gray, by Rowe
Jane Shore, by Rowe
Inconſtant, by Farquhar
King John, by Shakeſpeare
King Lear, by ditto
King Lear, by Tate
Limberham, by Dryden
Love for Love, by Congreve
Love in a Miſt
Love in a Tub, by Etherege
Love makes a Man, by C. Cibber
Love's Laſt Shift, by ditto
Lying Lovers, by Steele
Macbeth, by Shakeſpeare
Man of Mode, by Etherege
Mariamne, by Fenton
Meaſure for Meaſure, by Shakeſpeare
Miſtake, by Vanbrugh
Mourning Bride, by Congreve
Much ado about Nothing
Muſtapha, by Lord Orrery
Nonjuror, by C. Cibber
Oedipus, by Dryden
Old Bachelor, by Congreve
Oroonoko, by Southern
Orphan, by Otway

Othello, by Shakeſpeare
Perjured Huſband
Perolla and Iſidora, by C. Cibber
Phædra and Hippolitus, by Smith
Pilgrim, by Beaumont and Fletcher
Polly, by Mr. Gay
Propheteſs, by Beaumont
Provok'd Huſband, by C. Cibber
Provok'd Wife by Vanbrugh
Recruiting Officer, by Farquhar
Refuſal, by Cibber
Rehearſal, by D. of Bucks
Relapſe, by Vanbrugh
Revenge, by Dr. Young
Richard III. by C. Cibber
Rival Fools, by Cibber
Rival Ladies, by Dryden
Rival Queens, by Lee
Romeo and Juliet, altered by Mr. Garrick
Royal Merchant, by Beaumont
Rule a Wife and a have a Wife
School Boy, by Cibber
Scornful Lady, by Beaumont and Fletcher
She would and ſhe would not, by Cibber
She would if ſhe could, by Etherege
Siege of Damaſcus, by Hughes
Silent Woman by B. Johnſon
Sir Courtly Nice, by Crown
Sir Harry Wildair, by Farquhar

Sir

Digitized by Google

PLAYS, *printed for* T. LOWNDES, at 6d. and 1s. each.

Sir Martin Mar-All, by Dryden
Sir Walter Raleigh, by Dr. Sewell
'Squire of Alſatia, by T. Shadwell
Stage Coach, by Farquhar
State of Innocence, by Dryden
Strollers
Suſpicious Huſband, by Dr. Hoadley
Tamerlane, by Rowe
Tempeſt, by Shakeſpeare
Tender Huſband, by Steele
Theodoſius, or the Force of Love
Timon of Athens, by Shakeſpeare
Titus and Berenice, with the Cheats of Scapin, by Otway
Twelfth Night, by Shakeſpeare
Twin Rivals, by Farquhar
Two Gentlemen of Verona
Venice Preſerved, by Otway
Ulyſſes, by Rowe
Way of the World, by Congreve
What d'ye call it? by Gay
Wife to be let
Wife's Relief, or Huſband's Cure
Wild Gallant, by Dryden
Wit without Money
Woman's a Riddle
Wonder, a Woman keeps a Secret, by Centlivre
Zara, with the Interlude, by A. Hill, Eſq.
Agis, 1s
Arden of Feverſham, 1s
Douglas, 1s
Eaſtward Howe, 1s
Gentleman Dancing Maſter, 1s
Love in a Wood, 1s
Paſquin, 1s
Perkin Warbeck, 1s
Plague of Riches, French and Engliſh, 1s
Plain Dealer, 1s
Siege of Aquileia, 1s

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google